

# A Universal Galaxy Ruptures

by Halo-Guy Fan

Category: Halo, Mass Effect  
Genre: Adventure, Sci-Fi  
Language: English  
Characters: Master Chief/John-117, Shepard (M)  
Status: In-Progress  
Published: 2013-03-17 09:33:49  
Updated: 2014-06-17 06:51:04  
Packaged: 2016-04-27 04:08:06  
Rating: T  
Chapters: 10  
Words: 99,090  
Publisher: [www.fanfiction.net](http://www.fanfiction.net)  
Summary: Multiple crossovers JC's Avatar, Star Wars, Halo, Mass Effect, and more. Ch.10: Turians vs Mandalorians

## 1. Chapter 1: The Beginning

**\*\*100,000 B.C.E.:\*\*** The Forerunners fire the Halo array wiping out all sentient life in the Milky Way Galaxy and stopping the Flood.

**\*\*5th Century Earth:\*\*** Hungarian warlord Alexander Corvinus is the only remaining survivor of a lethal plague that wipes out everyone in his village. In him the infection is able to mutate and mold him into the first Immortal. His twin sons Marcus and William are born.

**\*\*6th Century Earth:\*\*** William, bitten by a wolf, mutates and becomes the first Werewolf, and later, Marcus, bitten by a bat, becomes the first Vampire. Marcus turns a dying Hungarian warlord named Viktor into a Vampire in order to create an army of Vampires to hunt down and capture William who is unable to control his rage and is unable to change back. The disease inside William is so potent that his victims are unable to take human form again until death, his bite could also cause his victims to transform postmortem. Marcus also turns a female named Amelia for unknown reasons. Marcus, Viktor, and Amelia become the three Vampire elders and form the first Vampire Coven.

**\*\*1202 AD:\*\*** William is finally captured but Viktor and Amelia betray Marcus and imprison William. They don't kill him believing that if they did William's demise would bring the death of all Werewolves, including those they use as slaves, with the same rule allegedly applying to the Vampires if they killed Marcus. This was in fact a clever lie told by Marcus to protect his brother's life, as well as his own. William remained imprisoned for several centuries afterward. The Vampire elders set up the "Chain". The Chain served three functions: first, an ingenious power-sharing arrangement among the

three Elders, avoiding conflict among them by ensuring that only one of them was in command in any given century; and second, to give each Elder a much-needed respite from the demands of eternity; and the third was to keep Marcus from ever getting the chance to free his twin brother.

**\*\*1207 AD:\*\*** Lucian is born to an imprisoned Werewolf in the Vampires' dungeon. The astounding fact is that he is born in human form.

**\*\*1218 AD:\*\*** Viktor begins to use Lucian to create a second breed of Werewolves called Lycans; Werewolf, but also human. Since the Lycans were able to control their transformations Viktor turned them into slaves to work for and guard the Vampires in the daylight hours.

**\*\*1402 AD:\*\*** Lucian falls in love with Viktor's daughter Sonja and the two marry in secret. Sonja is impregnated by Lucian. Viktor finds out and attempt's to kill Lucian and Sonja, but due to inside help they manage to escape. Lucian returns with an army of free and newly turned Lycans and William's breed and sacks the Vampire stronghold. The war between Vampires and Lycans begins. Sonja gives birth to a hybrid child, a son named Xavier.

**\*\*May 1502:\*\*** Sonja gives birth to her second child, a daughter named Lily.

**\*\*October 24,1945:\*\*** The United Nations is formed in response to World War II. It would centuries later become known as the United Nations Space Command, or the UNSC.

**\*\*October 2003:\*\*** A Vampire named Selene uncovers Lucian's plot to use a human named Michael Corvin to turn himself into a hybrid. Selene who has fallen in love with Michael awakens Viktor and attempts to stop it while smuggling Michael out. Michael gets shot with silver nitrate by Kraven who is moments later killed by Lucian, but not before revealing to Selene that it was Viktor not the Lycans who killed her family all those centuries ago. In order to save Michael's life Selene bites him mixing her Vampire strain with the Lycan strain given to him when Lucian bit him two nights ago, this officially turns Michael into a Hybrid. Lucian decides to stay a Lycan. Events from **\*\*Underworld Evolution \*\***take place.

**\*\*April 2004:\*\*** Humanity learns of the existence of Vampires and Lycans. This leads to the Purges, a series of mass killings against the Lycans and Vampires. Lucian and his Lycan followers take shelter in a private owned Lycan company called Antigen. Lucian offers Selene and Michael protection.

**\*\*July 2004:\*\*** Selene gives birth to her daughter Eve.

**\*\*June 2016:\*\*** After twelve years of research and tests using hybrid DNA from Eve and Michael, Antigen scientists have created a drug that will hopefully make Lycans immune to silver. Lucian tests they drug and goes through multiple treatments and injections. The results are that Lucian is successfully transformed into a Super Lycan. Along with vast increases in strength, muscle mass, self-healing, stamina, and speed the drug is proven to give Lycans immunity to silver, or at the very least a skin deep immunity. Before the drug can be shipped globally Hungarian military forces attack. INTERPOL (UN Intelligence)

interferes and offers to store Lucian and his family, Selene, Michael, Eve, and all the surviving Lycans and Vampires at secure locations in cryogenic sleep under their protection until public terror over their existence calms down. In return INTERPOL has free rein to experiment with them and Antigen must be destroyed. They all reluctantly except. INTERPOL would later become the Office on Naval Intelligence or ONI in the centuries to come.

**\*\*2164-2170:\*\*** The Interplanetary war comes to an end. This results in the rise of the UEG (United Earth Government), the changing of the United Nations into the United Nations Space Command, and the rise of ONI.

**\*\*April 2291:\*\*** The **\*\*Shaw-Fujikawa Translight Engine\*\*** (or slip space drive) is developed by Tobias Fleming Shaw and Wallace Fujikawa. This allows humanity to achieve faster-than-light interstellar travel.

**\*\*March 05, 2330:\*\*** After studying the Vampires and Lycans method of blood memories ONI has finally succeeded in creating a device that replicates this feat called the Animus, it basically was able to read a subject's genetic memory, and project it onto an external screen in three dimensions.

**\*\*January 01,2335:\*\*** ONI has located two suitable planets on which the Lycans and Vampires can live on. The first one located third closet to the systems sun is very similar to Earth only with more forests and mountains. The second is the fifth planet from the sun behind a giant asteroid field. With a little terraforming to the planet's atmosphere to block out most of the suns ultraviolet light, the planet would be perfect for Vampires to colonize.

**\*\*January 02,2335:\*\*** ONI awakens Lucian and the others from there 319 year deep freeze. By using the Animus for a few weeks they are able to learn all that has happened while they were asleep. After learning about the chosen planets they can live on both species of Immortals decide to relocate for their own good. Though Selene and Eve decide to go with Michael to the Lycans planet. The Phoenix-class Colony ships are given to them to keep and a UNSC colony is founded in the system as well in order for the UNSC to associate with the Immortals and to spy on them from a distance.

**\*\*2517:** ONI **\*\*starts the Spartan II program to combat the ever rising threat of the Insurrectionists. Doctor Catherine Elizabeth Halsey is put in charge of the project and gathers 150 suitable candidates, but budget cuts cut the number of candidates in half. Seventy-five children, five and six years old and of both sexes, were kidnapped from their homes to take part in the program. In order to preserve the program's secrecy, the children were replaced by flash clones which would die soon afterwards due to numerous medical complications associated with flash-cloning a human being. Chief Petty Officer Franklin Mendez is put in charge of training along with some volunteer Vampires and Lycans. By studying the unique physiology of the Immortals Doctor Halsey is able to improve her Spartans passed here original expectations, her Spartans will be get an additional increase in strength, speed, eyesight and hearing, as well as mild healing factor.**

**\*\*2525: \*\*Thirty-one years of war with the Insurrectionists has proven hard on the UNSC. Millions of lives, including civilians, have**

been lost. Although the Spartans have proved effective, the UNSC searches for a way to end the war quickly. There's an old saying "\*\*\*Be careful what you wish for, you just might get it\*\*\*". That will soon come to a horrifying truth. For on the horizon something dark awaits that will test humanities very right to exist in the galaxy.

## 2. Chapter 2: The Human-Covenant War

\*\*A/N This is my first fan fic so I hope people like it. This is not just a ME/Halo crossover but also has several other SCI-FI universes mixed in, including Star Wars and Transformers. \*\*

\*\*I am welcome to ideas and suggestions regarding things to add.\*\*

\*\*I also wanted to apologize for the Underworld background taking up most of the last chapter. I just felt the need to explain some things and how it fits into the Halo universe in my story. \*\*

\*\*Halo, Mas Effect and the others belong to their respected owners.\*\*

\* \* \*

><p><strong>February 3, 2525:<strong> Humanity has been in a state of civil war with the Insurrectionists for about thirty-one years. During this time the UNSC makes first contact with an alliance of alien species called the Covenant over the Outer colony world of \*\*Harvest\*\*. The Human-Covenant War begins.

\*\*November 27, 2525: \*\*The Battle of \*\*Chi Ceti\*\* IV takes place between the UNSC Stalwart-class Frigate\*\*\_ Commonwealth\_\*\* and a Covenant CRS-class Light Cruiser \_\*\*Unrelenting\*\*\_. The \*\*\_Commonwealth\_\*\* suffers heavy damage but is able to disable the Covenant ship. Three members of Spartan II Blue Team Master Chief John-117, Kelly-087, and Samuel-034 are sent to destroy the ship and as a test of the new MJOLNIR Powered Assault Armor. Blue Team succeeds and Samuel-034 survives after his armor is almost compromised.

\*\*February 13, 2526:\*\* Almost all leaders of the Insurrectionists agree to peace with the UNSC after the Covenant glass the Outer colony\*\* Bliss\*\*. They pledge all their men, ships, and resources to the war.

\*\*March 1, 2526: \*\*Vice Admiral Preston Jeremiah Cole leads the UNSC Battle Group X-Ray along with his personal flagship the Valiant-class Super-heavy Cruiser \_\*\*Everest \*\*\_ arrive to retake \*\*Harvest. \*\*Admiral Cole wins the battle at the cost of 2/3 of his fleet. This proved the Covenant could be beaten, but at a large cost.

\*\*February 4, 2531: \*\*The Harvest Campaign has gone on for five years with multiple battles in space and on the planet. Despite all the UNSCs hard and valiant fighting the Covenant have glassed most of the planet along with most of the human forces. While all this was going on the Covenant were launching multiple attacks across the Outer colonies and are leaking into the Inner colonies. But the campaign was not a total loss, Lieutenant Jacob Keyes accidentally created a

countermeasure for the Covenants plasma torpedoes by using the jamming dishes on his ships meant to disrupt magnetic scanners and sensors, to break apart to magnetic fields holding the torpedoes together. If the disruption field is strong enough it can destroy the magnetic field holding the plasma torpedo together or the torpedo loses its tracking ability. It even works on the Covenants energy projectors to a lesser extent. This greatly levels the playing field for the UNSC.

**February 5, 2531:** The Covenant uncover a Forerunner structure on Harvest. There they find a holographic map that points them to the UNSC Outer colony world of **Arcadia**. Professor Ellen Anders of the **UNSC Spirit of Fire** recommends to its commander Captain James Cutter that they should pursue. Cutter agrees and the **Spirit of Fire** departs for **Arcadia** in hot pursuit.

**February 9, 2531:** Upon reaching **Arcadia**, two Covenant CCS-class Battlecruisers exit slipspace. The **Spirit of Fire** arrived soon after. Four Halcyon-class Light Cruisers (the **UNSC Belfast**, **UNSC Texas**, **UNSC Pillar of Autumn**, and **UNSC Armstrong**) engaged the two ships immediately, catching one of them with its shields down and destroying it. However, the UNSC force suffered for its part in the battle. The **Texas** and **Belfast** were both taken down, the **Armstrong** was venting atmosphere due to damage, and the **Autumn** suffered severe damage before being assisted by the **Spirit of Fire**. On the surface the Covenant find another set of ruins that lead them to **Shield 0459**, a world created by the Forerunners. The Prophet of Regret sends Arbiter Ripa 'Moramee to capture Professor Anders so he can use her to activate the armada of Forerunner warships on the planet and use them to destroy humanity. Captain Cutter immediately recalled all his remaining forces and pursued the Covenant along with the **UNSC Armstrong** which had made hasty repairs.

**February 23, 2531:** The **Spirit of Fire** and **Armstrong** arrive at the Shield World. Spartan II Red Team and Marine Forces lead by Sergeant John Forge are deployed to rescue Professor Anders. On the surface the force battles not only Covenant but also parasite like creatures. The **Spirit's** A.I. Serina located Anders' signal, which was apparently in the middle of an ocean. While the **Spirit** was hovering over the sea, the doors of a huge submerged entry into the planet opened. The **Spirit of Fire** became locked into a powerful docking mechanism and inevitably began a controlled 'fall' into the rift. After extracting all UNSC forces, the **Spirit of Fire** began her descent and emerged into the interior of the Shield World. In the inner Dyson Sphere of the Shield World, the **Spirit of Fire** was immediately on a collision course with a Covenant Destroyer. Despite hard course corrections, the two ships impacted, with a large section of the **Spirit** being violently sheared off. Escaping from the Destroyer, the **Spirit's** A.I., Serina, detected Anders' signal. Sergeant Forge, along with Spartan Red Team, were deployed to the signal's apparent source on the Shield World's inner surface. Imprisoned in the Apex, Anders was forced by the Arbiter to activate the ancient artifact, powering up a huge fleet of Forerunner ships. In their religious fervor, her guards were distracted and Anders used a Transporter pad to return to the surface, where she was rescued by Forge. A plan was then hatched to stop the Covenant from using the Forerunners ships. The UNSC forces would use the still intact slipspace drive on the shipwrecked remains of the **Armstrong**

\*\*\_to create an explosion so powerful it would collapse the miniature artificial star inside the Shield World, completely obliterating the installation. Spartan Red Team and Lieutenant John Forge transport the slipspace drive to the Apex's control center where Read Team engaged the Elite Honor Guards and Sergeant Forge kills Arbiter Ripa 'Moramee. The makeshift bomb is placed and its remote detonation is set to go. As the sun slowly went supernova, the \*\*\_Spirit\_\*\*\*\*\_of Fire\_\*\* was caught in its increasing Gravity Well. Slingshotting around the sun, the \*\*\_Spirit\_\*\* was able to break away from the gravity well and escape through the portal, and far enough from the Shield World not to be caught in the Supernova's blast radius and into slipspace.

\*\*February 12, 2535: \*\*Master Chief's homeworld \*\*Jericho VII\*\* is glassed by the Covenant. Many of the orphans from the planet would become Spartan III's.

\*\*July 2, 2535: \*\*The Covenant attacks Argolis. A team of engineers were sent to a UNSC testing facility to enact the \*\*Cole Protocol\*\*, destroying navigation data and a prototype suit of power armor. However, one Marine engineer, " Ghost", went against orders and equipped the armor, knowing it was the only way both the Marines and the civilians would be able to escape the planet. Ghost destroyed all the Covenant's ground forces while sustaining heavy damage to the armor and great injury to himself. The armor was on a countdown timer to self-destruct, but it needed a voice command to complete the action. After destroying all Covenant forces Ghost died of his injuries before he could give the command. Thus the armor survived to later be picked up by the UNSC for continued production.

\*\*2536: \*\*The first team of Spartan III's Alpha Company is activated. The SPARTAN-III's were designed to be better trained, cheaper, and expendable. They would be trained in companies of 300 to 330 at a time, and then sent on suicide missions that the UNSC could not accomplish even with the elite Orbital Drop Shock Troopers(ODSTs). Though the casualty rates of the SPARTAN-III's stood at 100 percent on some missions, to ONI, all the operations were strategic successes. They were trading lives for time against the larger and technologically superior Covenant Empire.

\*\*August 2, 2537: \*\*OPERATION: PROMETHEUS, a high-risk mission ordered by ONI. The mission took place on K7-49, a volcanic asteroid which served as a Covenant shipyard. The shipyard was destroyed, all of Alpha Company confirmed KIA.

\*\*December 7, 2540: \*\*The Covenant reach the Immortal system. After scanning the system they discover the UNSC colony \*\*New \*\*\*\*Beginnings\*\*. They also discover the new Lycan and Vampire homeworlds but mistake them for UNSC worlds. Fleetmaster Thel 'Vadam splits his force of 30 ships into 1/3 and sends 9 \_CCS\_-class Battlecruisers and his own CAS-Assault Carrier to \*\*New\*\* \*\*Beginnings,\*\* 10 \_SDV\_-class Heavy Corvettes to \*\*AUKOC \*\* (the Lycan homeworld), and 10 CRS-class Light Cruisers to \*\*Ã-rdÃ¶ghÃ;z\*\* (the Vampire homeworld). The attacks go well at first until Thel starts to get reports from his Elites of humans changing into creatures on the Lycan world and reports from the Jackals about humans who move so fast even their eyes can't track them in the darkness. The Lycans and Vampires prove to be very effective against Covenant ground forces. Lycans can out maneuver most Elites and their strong enough to wrestle with Zealots. Jiralhanae prove to be able to

beat an average Lycan in strength but have trouble facing to few Super Lycans they come across. As for the Vampires, with their world virtually covered in complete darkness they can use their superior speed to pick off the Grunts and Jackals at their leisure, even Elites have trouble keeping up with their movements. The only problem either species is having is with the Hunters, they have to resort to firepower with them. Neither let the **\*\*Phoenix-class Colony Ships\*\*** they were given go to waste. While they hadn't been able to build much they had been able to build enough anti-ship and anti-air cannons to destroy or cripple the Covenant Corvettes and Light Cruisers. At the human colony of **\*\*New Beginnings \*\*UNSC** reinforcements had arrived and had managed to drive the Covenant off. After seeing and hearing how effective the Lycans and Vampires were against the Covenant HIGH COM asked them to join the war saying that now the Covenant know about them and as far as they know or care Lycans and Vampires are just humans. Lucian says he and his Lycans will fight but is worried about what will happen should the Covenant return, the Vampire Council with Selene's friend David at its head says the same thing. Cindy, the A.I of the **\*\*\_UNSC\_\*\*\_** **\*\*Atlantic,\*\*\_** informs them that she deleted the navigation information pointing to the Immortal System from the surviving Covenant ships computers. Unless the UNSC loses the war they have nothing to fear about the Covenant returning soon. Both sides then give their support and the soldiers are off for hardcore military training.

**\*\*April 18, 2543: \*\*Admiral Cole's Last Stand.**

**\*\*March 9, 2545:\*\*** Doctor Halsey has recreated and perfected the old Antigen drug for Lycans. It will not turn every Lycan into a Super Lycan, that will only happen to those who have the potential, but it will unlock the full Lycans DNA giving them increased strength, speed, muscle mass, even silver resistance. She has also created a variation of her Spartan armor and has managed to somehow make it extremely flexible, so flexible that it can be worn underneath a Lycans clothes and when it changes into its Lycan form the armor will stretch and shape itself to fit the Lycan. As for the Vampires, she managed by studying Selene and David by created an enzyme which once taken will mutate the Vampires into no longer being overly allergic to sunlight.

**\*\*2546:\*\*** Battle of Sargasso, Admiral Gregory White revolutionizes space-naval warfare with tactics described as space-guerrilla warfare.

**\*\*January 8, 2552:\*\*** UNSC fakes the destruction of the Forerunner A.I know as "The Knowing" during the Battle of **\*\*Ariel\*\***. The Covenant leave without bothering to glass the planet. Humanity takes the A.I to Earth and starts to learn from the A.I. It tells them the location of a Forerunner artifact on Reach and Earth.

**\*\*July 24-August 30, 2552:\*\*** A large Covenant Armada of over 800 ships, half of them CCS-class Battlecruisers, is detected heading towards **\*\* Reach\*\***. The defenses are prepared and the Colonists decide to all fight rather than flee. The UNSC fleet manages to hold their ground as the battle rages for weeks as both sides send reinforcements almost continually. Spartan II Black Team is successful with their mission on the nearby Colony world of **\*\*Verge\*\*** and arrive to help. Lycans and Vampires arrive on board Carriers and continue to prove effective, especially when the virus in their bites

are deadly to all the Covenants ground forces. The **Spirit of Fire** arrives with Spartan Red Team and Team Omega to help in the battle. Team Omega works with Noble Team and insures they live at the cost of two of their own. Admiral Cole unexpectedly returns after being thought dead with his fully repaired and refit flagship the **UNSC Everest** along with the last Insurrectionists fleet under the command of his second ex-wife Lyrenne Castilla. The Covenant were forced to retreat and Reach survived with no glassing.

**August 31, 2552:** Admiral Cole was later debriefed by HIGH COM and FLEET COM, during which he stated that he survived his last stand at Viperidae by engaging a largely inaccurate slipspace jump just before the planet exploded. He exited slipspace with his Shaw-Fujikawa Translight Engine irreparable. Luckily, he reappeared over the planet the last Insurrectionists fleet was using as its base, and even more luckily his ex-wife who was commanding the fleet decided not to kill him. Instead she had his ship repaired and resupplied. His luck reached unimaginable levels when they intercepted the message about the attack on **Reach** and convinced her to come with him to help.

**September 2, 2552:** Doctor Halsey presents John-117 with an A.I created from a flash cloned copy of her own brain named Cortana. The refitted and upgraded **Pillar of Autumn** and a small battle group chase after the Covenant with John-117 aboard.

**September 19 - September 22, 2552:** The Events of Alpha Halo or Installation 04 transpire. the **Pillar of Autumn** and Captain Keyes survive and make it back to Earth. Another ship took its place in activating its reactor saying that the **Autumn** was more valuable to the UNSC.

**October 20- November 2, 2552:** A small fleet of Covenant ships led by the High Prophet of Regret jumps into the Sol system. The First Battle of Earth takes place. The Covenant force is slaughtered while the Home Fleet and the Orbital Defense Platforms received minimal losses. However one Assault Carrier, the Prophet of Regret's flagship, manages to slip through the defenses by using its fellow ships as a shield and lands forces in the city of New Mombasa. The Battle of Mombasa takes place as Regret flees via an atmospheric jump, causing widespread damage to the city and nearly destroying the Orbital Elevator, the Master Chief on board the UNSC Frigate **In Amber Clad** commanded by Miranda Keyes manages to give chase.

**October 31-November 3, 2552:** At the same time the battle of Earth was happening, a battle had commenced on a Forerunner Shield World claimed by the UEG called **Onyx**, this also happened to be where the Spartan III program to place. Doctor Halsey arrives with all of Blue Team composed of Will-043, Linda-058, Fred-104, Samuel-034, and Kelly-087. Only the Master Chief was not present. The real reason Halsey brought Blue Team to Onyx was to protect them from further war. She planned to put them inside the Shield World to outlast the war safe. The Covenant Second Fleet of Homogeneous Clarity arrived at Onyx under orders to destroy all UNSC forces and recover any Forerunner artifacts. At the conclusion of the battle, Onyx was effectively destroyed, Battlegroup Stalingrad was destroyed with only the Prowler **UNSC Dusk** escaping, the entire Covenant Fleet and ground force was obliterated, and Doctor Halsey, Linda-058,



Fred-104, Samuel-034, Kelly-087, Kurt-051, Will-043, Spartan III Team Katana, and Senior Chief Petty Officer Franklin Mendez escaped to the safety of the Shield World within the Micro Dyson Sphere. Will-043 beat a Hunter to death with his bare hands and was saved by Fred-104 when its bond brother turned its assault cannon on him. Kurt-051 was injured and volunteered to stay behind and detonate two FENRIS Nuclear warheads to destroy the Antechamber to stop the Covenant from following them into the Sphere, but the survivors of Spartan III Team Saber throw him through the portal saying "\*\*\*You always looked out for our survival sir. Now its our turn".\*\*

\*\*November 2\*\*- \*\*November 3, 2552: \*\*The Battle of Installation 05 or Delta Halo transpires. The Master Chief kills the Prophet of Regret. On the Covenant Holy City of \*\*High Charity\*\* the Forerunner A.I Mendicant Bias, who is housed inside the Forerunner Dreadnought that powers High Charity, see's its chance to begin its retribution for its crimes and reveals the truth behind the Human-Covenant War. How the San 'Shyuum or Prophets mistranslated some Forerunner symbols that they thought it meant "Reclamation", but it really meant "Reclaimer", how it told to tell them this when they first met the humans on \*\*Harvest, \*\*and that to keep their power over the Covenant they told all their blind followers a bunch of lies and commanded them to wipe out humanity. It also added that the Prophets planed to put the Brutes in charge to replace the Elites once they gave the order for their genocide.

\*\*November 4, 2552:\*\* To say that everyone was outraged would be an understatement. All of \*\*High Charity\*\* became a battle field. Miranda Keyes seeing an opportunity to end the war offered any species of the Covenant mercy and forgiveness if they helped bring this war to an end and help the UNSC. Many took her up on her offer. The Gravemind on the Halo tried to take advantage of the chaos by sending in hundreds of Flood forms aboard the infected Frigate \*\*\_In Amber\_ \_Clad\_\*\* But Bias foresaw this so he took control of \*\*High Charity\*\*, moved it out of the \*\*\_In\_ \_Amber Clad's\_\*\* slipspace path so it would miss, and then used the stations powerful defenses to destroy the ship. In the end the Prophet of Mercy was killed and the San 'Shyuum council was disbanded until further notice. Tartarus, the Head Chieftain of the Jiralhanae, was slain by Arbiter Thel Vadam, and the Prophet of Truth managed to escape with 3 Assault Carriers and 27 Battlecruisers. After gaining control of High Charity Arbiter Thel Vadam, the unanimously appointed leader of the Elites, had every ship under his control fire and destroy the ring and the flood on it. A message was sent out all through out Covenant space and to every Covenant fleet telling them what happened and a recording of what Mendicant Bias had said. He then agreed to go to Earth to help track down Truth and his remaining followers and to discuss peace. Mendicant Bias told Miranda Keyes that he would take humanity to the \*\*Ark\*\*.

\*\*November 7, 2552: \*\*The Sangheili Fleet of Retribution and the Fleet of New Faith, 25 ships in total, arrive at \*\*Earth\*\* to discuss peace and to come up with a plan to find Truth. Finding Truth turned out to be the easy part as his fleet arrived at Earth to activate and enter the portal device unearthed by the UNSC months ago. The fleet had grown in size from 3 Assault Carriers and 27 Battlecruisers to 5 Assault Carriers and 40 Battlecruisers, no doubt from gathering all of his remaining loyalist forces. Truth sends 2 of his Assault Carriers and 13 Battlecruisers as shields for his remaining ships to make it down to Earth. Covenant ground and air forces quickly

launched and engaged the Marine forces at the portal. John-117, the Arbiter, and a battalion of Marines and Sangheili Ultras deploy with armor support to stop Truth. Just as all of Truth's deployed forces are defeated said prophet activates the portal and sends his remaining fleet into it. Before any sort of plan to pursue can be made another ship, a \_CCS\_-class Battlecruiser jumps out of slipspace and crashes into the city of Voi. Flood spill out and start to infect both the dead and the living. After fighting their way to an extraction Pelican the Arbiter orders Shipmaster Rtas 'Vadum to glass Voi before the flood can spread but only the city, it is done. Aboard a slightly damaged ODP, Cairo Station, the Arbiter along Fleet Admiral Lord Terrance Hood contact **\*\*High Charity\*\*** and discover that the Gravemind had removed itself from the Halo before they destroyed it. Mendicant Bias reports that the Gravemind is on its way with more flood, enough to infect all of **\*\*Earth.\*\*** But he also says that if they go through the portal to the **\*\*Ark \*\***there is a way to stop it. Newly promoted Commander Miranda Keyes volunteers to take her new ship the Charon-class Light Frigate **\*\*UNSC Forward Unto Dawn\*\*** through the portal after Truth. The Arbiter volunteers himself and the Fleet of Retribution as well.

**\*\*November 8, 2552: \*\***The Fleet of Retribution and the **\*\*Forward Unto Dawn\*\*** enter through the portal and come out at the **\*\*Ark,\*\*** a massive superstation bigger than **\*\*High Charity\*\***, its is described as a massive wheel with a series of eight curved arms, bearing similarities to a sun. Truth's remaining fleet of 3 Assault Carriers and 27 Battlecruisers engages them. When told that they are outnumbered three-to-one Shipmaster Rtas 'Vadum says, **"\*\*Then it is a fair fight".\*\*** The **\*\*Battle of the Ark \*\***begins. While the Sangheili fleet engages the Jiralhanae fleet the **\*\*Forward Unto Dawn\*\*** deploys Master Chief Spartan-117, Sergeant Major Avery Johnson, and the ODS 7th Battalion on to the **\*\*Ark\*\***. Despite being outnumbered three-to-one in space, the **\*\*Forward Unto\*\*** Dawn\_ and the Sangheili fleet made short work of the Loyalist space forces, likely due to the Sangheili's remarkable "tactical adeptness", as to the Jiralhanae's "tactical helplessness". On the ground heavy fighting insured. After rescuing several Marine teams the Master Chief and company cleared a landing zone for the **\*\*Dawn\*\***. With the space battle won Thel 'Vadam orders all his ships except for the **\*\*\_Shadow of Intent\_ \*\***back to **\*\*Earth \*\***before landing. 343 Guilty Spark from Installation 04 appears and seems to want to help them. He leads John-117, Thel, plus a pair of Marines, to the Ark's Cartographer to pinpoint Truth's location. He also shows them that the countless sentinels of the **\*\*Ark\*\*** have built are rebuilding Installation 04. After heavy fighting the humans and Sangheili set forth to attack Truth to stop him from activating the rings. An Assault Carrier suddenly appears out of slipspace, scans show it to be heavily infested with flood. It crashes into and badly damaging the **\*\*\_Shadow of\_\*\* \_\*\*Intent\*\*\_** and proceeds to the **\*\*Ark\*\***. As it passes over the unfinished ring another smaller slipspace portal opens and a prowler comes out and fires several nuclear missiles at the flood infested Assault Carrier. Badly damaged the Carrier is forced from its course and crashes into the unfinished ring. The prowler sends a message to the **\*\*D\*\*\*\*awn \*\***stating that Spartan II Grey Team has returned and is ready to help.

**\*\*November 9, 2552:\*\*** Johnson, who had disappeared during the assault, was in fact captured by Truth's forces and was being tortured into pressing the final switch to activate the other Halos. With Spartan-117 and the Arbiter too far away to stop Truth,

Commander Keyes grabbed a Pelican dropship and crashed into the facility to rescue Johnson, she killed a few Jiralhanae with her shotgun and threw her pistol at Johnson. They blast a few more but are then captured and Johnson is forced to activate the rings. The Master Chief and the Arbiter arrive and deal with the last of Truth's guards. The Arbiter kills Truth while the Chief stops the firing sequence. They all return to the **\*\*\_Shadow of Intent\_\*\*** to regroup and finish the fight with the flood. All remaining human and Sangheili forces head back to **\*\*Earth\*\*** on the **\*\*\_Shadow of Intent\_\*\*** while Miranda, Johnson, Chief, and the Arbiter take a pelican and move in on the Control Room of the incomplete Halo. The **\*\*\_Dawn\_\*\*** was left behind for them to use to escape. By now what was left of the Gravemind had set in deep on the ring and it would be crawling with flood. The four heroes with 343 Guilty Spark made it through waves of Flood to the Control Room. 343 Guilty Spark explained that the new Halo would be ready to fire within days, to which Johnson protested. Guilty Spark informed the three that activating Halo now would destroy both the Ark and the installation, Johnson told him to "deal with it" and prepared to activate the ring. Unwilling to let "his" ring be destroyed again, 343 Guilty Spark went rampant, mortally wounding Johnson and attacking Spartan-117, Miranda, and the Arbiter. However, with the help of a dying Sergeant Johnson and his Spartan Laser, the Master Chief managed to destroy Guilty Spark. Chief then started the firing sequence of the new Halo after Miranda had instructed Cortana to move the ring far enough from the **\*\*Ark\*\*** so that the resulting blast wouldn't damage it. They all drove back to the **\*\*\_Dawn\_\*\*** with Johnson barely alive. Chief and Cortana powered up the **\*\*Dawn's\*\*** engines while Miranda got Johnson to the sickbay and the Arbiter piloted the ship. The **\*\*\_Dawn\_\*\*** entered slipspace just as the new Halo fired. However, the slipspace portal collapsed as the **\*\*Dawn\*\*** entered it and while the forward half with the Arbiter, Miranda and Johnson made it to Earth, the rear half fell out of slipspace with Cortana and the Chief floating into the dark abyss. The Battle of the **\*\*Ark\*\*** ended the Human-Covenant War with both sides declaring a peace treaty. A monument is erected near the remains of Voi in remembrance of those who died in the line of duty including Spartan-117 who is labeled MIA. The Arbiter and his brethren then departed **\*\*Earth\*\*** for **\*\*Sanghelios\*\***.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>AN Well I hope you enjoyed it and hopefully my next update will be soon. I know you all probably are expecting me to get to the story next chapter. I'm going to finish up the timeline first and I promise that if its not to long I'll start the story in the same chapter. **\*\*Remember I am always open to suggestions. At least until we get to Mass Effect 1. After that I may stop adding franchises. One thing I'd like your help on is should Noble six be male or female. One a side note to those who don't know \*\*Aukoc is greeck-it means wolf, and \*\*Ã-rdÃ¼ghÃ;z is the name of the mansion that was the main headquarters of the Vampire Coven in Underworld. I thought they would make fitting names for the new homeworlds of the Lycans and Vampires.\*\*\*\*\***

### 3. Chapter 3: Rise of the OSA

**\*\*A/N: I'm sorry \*\*that this took longer than my last two chapters.\*\*  
\*\*I promise that\*\* this will be the final chapter with a timeline until after first contact with the Citadel Council. It will also**

feature the introduction of the Star Wars races, G.I JOE, and JC'S Avatar. Some of you who have read HaloMass Effect: Ruptured Universe by **\*\*JediSpectrel77\*\*** may notice similarity's in this chapter and in a few others. I am using his first few chapters as a template to get this story going (Don't worry I asked him) but make no mistake, this story will follow its own path. It will also contain aspects of **\*\*Joined Universes, Different Outcomes by\*\* theblazinghope2235** **\*\*(Don't worry I asked him).\*\*\*\***

**\*\*Halo, Mass Effect and the others belong to their respected owners. Some of the features in this chapter go to JediSpectrel77 and theblazinghope2235.\*\***

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Early 2553: <strong>Doctor Catherine Halsey, Linda-058, Fred-104, Samuel-034, Kelly-087, Kurt-051, Will-043, Spartan III Team Katana, and Senior Chief Petty Officer Franklin Mendez are rescued from the Dyson Sphere by Kilo-5 of ONI. Doctor Halsey is then arrested for hijacking ships and kidnapping a Spartan. Kelly and the other Spartan II's try to defend her but she tells them to stand down. She is later sent to work on the new human flagship the \_UNSC Infinity\_. ONI leaks the details behind the Spartan II program. The Spartan IV program is started.

**\*\*January 2553:\*\*** Arbiter Thel 'Vadam begins to visit the various states to finalize a peace treaty with humanity. He argued that too many Sangheili had been lost in the Great Schism, and that Sanghelios had to be rebuilt. This proposal was not well received by all, and civil unrest ensued. The Sangheili had been under the Prophets and relied on them for everything for so long. Without them and the Covenant disbanded many Sangheili had lost their way and were looking for a purpose in life. Dissident Sangheili began to join the Servants of Abiding Truth**\*\***, **\*\*an old orthodox religious group who opposed the Arbiter led by Avu Med 'Telcam. They believed in the ways of the Covenant and wanted to continue with its vision and humanity's destruction.**

**\*\*February 2553: \*\***Fleet Admiral Lord Terence Hood arrived on Sanghelios to formalize the cease-fire with the Arbiter. They met in the state of Vadam and formally ended hostilities. Kilo-5 under the new Director of ONI, ex-Spartan Captain Serin Osman, orders make secret contact with the Servant of Abiding Truth. They agreed to arm them with Sangheili weapons in exchange for the Servants leaving humanity alone if they seized power. ONI's true goal was to destabilize Sanghelios. Of course this was done without the UNSC's knowing. The Sangheili Civil War erupts. Admiral Hood arrived in orbit with the \_UNSC Infinity\_ and offered the Arbiter aid, which he grudgingly accepted. The \_Infinity\_ shoots down 'Telcam's ship \_Defender of Faith\_ and fired a MAC round directly into the besieging forces outside Vadam Keep. The siege quickly became a rout as the Arbiter counter-attacked. 'Telcam and the Servants were able to escape with three frigates intact, along with as many troops, vehicles and supplies the ships could hold.

**\*\*August 01\*\*\*\*, 2553\*\*\*\* -July 18\*\*, 2557\*\*:** **\*\*The Jiralhanae homeworld of Dosiac erupts into full fledged civil tribes are split between those who want to continue the old ways before they meet the Covenant and new idealists who want a better future for the Jiralhanae. The war ends after idealist leader Martin kills the last**

war tribe left. Martin claims the **\*\*Fist of Rukt\*\***, the oldest most powerful gravity hammer, and the title Chieftain of all Jiralhanae. Thus for the first time, the Jiralhanae can say they have a future where they truly know unity, under the new Jiralhanae Empire.

**\*\*July 21\*\***, **\*\*2557: \*\***After four years of drifting in space the remaining half of the \_Forward Unto Dawn\_ comes upon an unidentified Forerunner Shield World later revealed to be called Requiem. Unfortunately a Servants of Abiding Truth, now called the Storm Covenant, fleet is orbiting the planet as well. After being scanned by Requiem UNSC A.I Cortana wakes Master Chief Spartan-117 from cryo-sleep. A gravity well pulls the \_Dawn\_\*\*, \*\*\_and destroys it in the process, as well as the Storm into the planet which Cortana later states the Covenant had been orbiting for three years trying to get inside. Once planet side Cortana confesses to suffering from rampancy. The Master Chief vows to get her back to Earth, find Halsey, and save her life. Cortana picks up a comm signal coming from the \_UNSC Infinity\_ stating it's on its way to the last known location of the \_UNSC Forward Unto Dawn\_. Trying to save \_Infinity\_ from getting caught in the gravity well Cortana and the Chief travel to the center of Requiem to deactivate what they believe to be a satellite blocking them from contacting \_Infinity\_ not knowing that it's really a Dyson Sphere. On the way the Chief fights off legions of Storm Covenant and Forerunner battle A.I called Prometheans. After deactivating the Dyson Sphere they accidentally release a living Forerunner known as **\*\*The Didact\*\*** who takes control of the Prometheans and promises to wipe out humanity. After escaping from Requiem's core Chief and Cortana watch \_Infinity\_ crash on Requiem.

**\*\*July 22, 2557:\*\*** After fighting off Storm and Promethean forces, debriefing on \_Infinity\_, meeting the Librarian, learning about humanity's ancient past, receiving immunity to the composer (the Didact's ultimate weapon), Cortana delving deeper into rampancy, and finally defeating the Didact over Earth after he had destroyed half of New Phoenix, the Master Chief returned to Earth alive and handed Cortana over to the UNSC's scientists to save her before she delved to deep into rampancy.

**\*\*February 2558:\*\*** The Requiem Campaign begins. Blue Team, once more led by the Master Chief, boards the \_Infinity\_ alongside Noble Team and scores of Spartan IV fireteams for Requiem. Spartan-117 Has been promoted to a new position created just for him, **\*\*Master Chief Supreme Commander of the Navy\*\***, and is the leader of all Spartans in the UNSC. Their mission on Requiem is to clear out the Storm Covenant so the UNSC can set up science bases. Captain Thomas Lasky and Commander Sarah Palmer are leading the show. After coming out of slipspace and engaging the entire Storm Fleet, forcing it to flee inside the planet, \_Infinity\_ launched her compliment of 10 Charon-class light frigates and hundreds of Broadsword fighters. Dozens of Spartan and Marine fireteams are deployed down onto Requiem. After finding a Forerunner artifact that causes power fluctuations throughout \_Infinity\_ and the artifact sucks up Doctor Henry Glassman, Doctor Halsey is summoned to inspect the artifact and fix \_Infinity's\_ forerunner engines. Intelligence gathered that Fleetmaster Jul 'Mdama, the leader of the Storm Covenant, was on Requiem overseeing operations. He managed to gain access to the comms of Dr. Halsey's data pad and anonymously plied her with questions. When he inquired what she knew of the Librarian, Halsey was so shocked that it aroused suspicion from the nearby Sarah Palmer, who

promptly confiscated the data pad and escorted Halsey to the brig. This setback proved of little consequence, however, as Dr. Glassman, who had been captured after being teleported by the artifact to Jul 'Mdama's location, managed to somehow activate the Librarian's crypt. Jul believed that the Librarian would give him Forerunner secrets. He and the nearby Sangheili were awestruck at the spectacle caused by Glassman's activation of the artifact. So awestruck, in fact, that they did not even notice when the doctor backed past them and ran from the 'Mdama discovered that the artifact would only open to a humans touch, he flew into a rage and sent all nearby Sangheili after the escaped scientist, including his lieutenant, Gek. Dr. Glassman was rescued by Spartan IV Gabriel Thorn of Fireteam Majestic. Meanwhile, \_Infinity\_ came under attack by Prometheans via artifact and Dr. Halsey was captured.

With the abduction of Dr. Halsey by enemy forces, Admiral Osman, head of ONI, ordered Lasky to assassinate Halsey lest the Covenant glean any sensitive intel from her. Sarah Palmer was deployed from \_Infinity\_ despite Lasky's admonishments to the contrary. As soon as she was out of earshot Lasky contacted Fireteam Majestic and asked them to rescue Dr. Halsey, without telling them that Palmer was en route. The Spartans returned to the Covenant's base and engaged the sentries outside while Thorne used his recently-acquired cloaking unit to slip inside. At the same time, Dr. Halsey unlocked the shield set up by Glassman and entered the Librarian's shrine. Inside she was greeted by the Librarian and presented with the two pieces of the Janus Key; it offered the location of every piece of Forerunner technology in the Galaxy if taken to the Absolute Record. Once she reappeared outside the shrine, Jul 'Mdama snatched one of the halves away from her, not noticing the second piece in Halsey's hand. At that moment Thorne broke a nearby sentry's back, killing the other with his assault rifle. Halsey tossed the other half of the Janus Key to the Spartan. Just as a sword-wielding warrior was about to kill him from behind, it was killed by Palmer. A pair of Promethean Knights appeared to protect 'Mdama and Halsey, but not before Palmer shot Halsey in the shoulder. The rest of Majestic appeared and fought through the army of Prometheans alongside Palmer. Before they could reach the cornered 'Mdama, a Knight appeared behind him. But just before the Knight could teleport Jul and Halsey away, it was destroyed by a sniper shot. In the next few seconds, in a series of blurs, Jul Mdama was lying on the ground and Dr. Halsey was surrounded by Blue Team. Apparently Lasky had sent them as backup. While Blue Team protected her from Palmer Chief took the other half of the Janus Key from Mdama but a Promethean Knight suddenly appeared teleporting him away before the Spartan could finish him off. Blue Team went back to \_Infinity\_ with Halsey to get her medical aid.

Angered by his defeat Jul 'Mdama activated a secluded terminal that would cause Requiem to fall into the sun and drag \_Infinity\_ with it since it was still anchored to Requiem. 'Mdama and most of the Covenant ground forces then used the remaining ships in the Covenant fleet to flee Requiem. But as the Storm fleet exited the planet slipspace portals across space opened up and out came the Fleet of Sangehilios led by Arbiter Thel Vadam blocking Madama's escape. Thel contacted Jul and \_Infinity\_ saying his fleet would keep Madama from entering slipspace and escaping, that the Storm Covenant would end this day. While the fleets engaged Palmer, Fireteam Majestic and Crimson were fighting their way on the surface trying to deactivate the artifacts anchoring \_Infinity\_ to Requiem. Blue Team was deployed

to find the terminal used by Madama to try to stop Requiem's doom and return it to its original planetary position. All three teams succeeded and Infinity was freed just in time to help the Arbiter finish off Jul's flagship. At the end of the day Requiem was saved, Jul Madama was dead, and the Storm Covenant was defeated with help from Arbiter Thel Vadam once more. This cemented Thel's image with the UEG and UNSC and strengthening the fragile alliance between Humanity and the Sangheili.

**\*\*March 01, 2558: \*\***A fully healed Dr. Halsey reveals that the real reason Osman wanted her dead was because she had very sensitive and incriminating evidence against Osman and ONI, including the Spartan III program and Kilo-5's involvement in the Sangheili Civil War and the forming of the Storm Covenant. Captain Lasky escorted Halsey safely to Earth where she gave the evidence to HIGH COM in exchange for a full pardon for her crimes. In order to save themselves ONI handed over Osman and Parangosky over on a platter. After executing Osman and Parangosky Lord Hood finally brings ONI into the light under the full command of the UNSC. With the Master Chief's recommendation Doctor Catherine Elizabeth Halsey was elected as the new director of ONI.

**\*\*March 15, 2558:\*\*** Cortana recovers from rampancy and has reached metastability, the first human AI to do so, and such, she was now a sentient being, a true artificial person, just lacking a physical body. She decides to continue to serve with the Master Chief.

**\*\*March 16, 2558: \*\***The Frigate Lightning Strike receives a distress call from a small commercial ship, showing tourists the beauty of Mars, orbiting Mars when it was grabbed by a magnetic field shift and was pulled down into the southern hemisphere. When the Lightning Strike arrived it too was pulled into the unexplained magnetic field and was pulled down as well into the atmosphere towards an area known as the Southern Depression. The captain dumped all power into the thrusters and aligned them into the direction of Mars's surface. It worked. The Lightning Strike was freed from the magnetic field, an action that somehow also destabilized the magnetic field. The magnetic field collapsed and the commercial ship, which was almost pulled to the planet's surface by this point, was freed and managed to return to space.

**\*\*March 17, 2558: \*\***Scientists could offer no explanation for the strange occurrence. So, a team of scientists and researchers, guarded by a team of marines, were sent to scout out the Southern Depression for the cause of this strange phenomenon. They discovered a subterranean Prothean ruin. It came as a shock to the UNSC and the former Covenant that there were other aliens out there that they hadn't met yet, but only a small shock. The UNSC science division coordinated a massive effort to access, translate, and interpret the data banks and reverse engineer the technologies recovered from the facility. The facility proved to be a biosciences observation post built when Humans were redeveloping on Earth. While the motives of the Protheans are not certain, translated records show that the facility was in regular communication with automated observation platforms in Earth's orbit and the lunar near side. The two Mass Effect spaceships found in the facility were presumably used for first-hand observation and defense if necessary.

After the entire base had been searched several times over multiple

items and objects were found of particular interest to Humanity. The ruins contained a malfunctioning Mass Effect core, which was the cause of the previously unexplained magnetic field shifts, and several starships, as well as refined element zero. All in all, there were five items retrieved from the facility that would interest Humanity the most. The motives and conclusions of the Prothean observers remained unknown, even until this day, but the ruins data cache, opened up an entire new field of technology to Humanity. The technology of the Mass Effect. It paved the way for the development of more accurate and faster slipspace FTL drives and Mass Effect field technology. ONI eventually took over the study of the Protheans as well as the Forerunners.

**\*\*March 20, 2558: \*\***After the discovery of the Protheans the UEG and the former Covenant races met at Earth to create a new alliance. They knew that they could very well be hostile and that their best chance was to stick together and try to forgive past old feelings of hostility and move past them. This decision was made after the Forerunner A.I "The Knowing", which the UNSC had recovered during the war on **\*\*Ariel,\*\*** stated that it knew about the Protheans and the many other alien lifeforms that the Liberian had brought to the Ark. He even said that he had been collecting information for the 100,000 years since the death of the Forerunners after activating the Halo Array, and if brought to the Absolute Record could lead humanity to them. This new alliance would be called the Orion Systems Alliance or the OSA. Each species would no longer feel enslaved and would be given embassies on **\*\*High Charity\*\***. The Colonial Administration Authority (CAA) would be transformed into a Senate made up of senators from each colony. At the head of the senate a council would be created to lead the OSA, the council is composed of one member of each race in the OSA. While any species may choose to join the OSA military instead of being forced the main military powers are the Sangheili, UNSC and the Jiralhanae.

**\*\*July 08, 2558: \*\***The construction of the OSA is complete and has been initiated as the center for galactic government in the Orion arm of the galaxy. The OSA's base of operations is the former Covenant holy city High Charity, now the capital of the OSA and the location of the OSA Senate and Council.

**\*\*July 10, 2558: \*\***The OSA Council authorizes an expedition through the portal of Earth to the Ark. When they arrive they find the Ark completely intact with two new Halo Rings constructed to replace the two that were destroyed. Scientist and military personal from all species in the OSA arrive at the ark on UNSC Phoenix-class colony ships. On the Ark cities and factories are built by each species and are set up on different arms of the Ark. The scientists from each race begin studying and researching the Ark. The Sangheili with the help from the UNSC turn the center of the Ark, where the Halo's were built, into a massive ship-yard to build and maintain ships from each species. The UNSC, Jiralhanae, and Sangheili use the massive building potential of the Ark to quickly rebuild their fleets that were lost in the Human-Covenant War.

**\*\*January 14, 2559: \*\***A Kig'Yar pirate fleet attacks three UNSC trade ships in two months and an Unggoy colony, they take everything of value. Apparently the Kig'Yar think that just because they're not slaves in this alliance they can steal from their friends. The OSA demands that the Kig'Yar stop practicing piracy, the UEG president gives a speech basically saying that the Kig'Yar can be known and



remembered as something better than marauding pirates. The reaction to the OSA's demand and the president's speech is mixed, most civilians and some leaders who were touched and motivated by the president's speech would be happy to put an end to the practice. The rest refuse, Eayn breaks into civil war and Kig'Yar colonies turn into either those against piracy or those who wish to continue. OSA forces are sent to help wipe out the pirates. Kig'Yar for an end to piracy follow the lead of Kig'Yar Shipmistress Artia. Thus begins the Kig'Yar Pirate war.

**\*\*May 3, 2559:\*\*** HIGH COMM decides to start a new elite special mission's force made up of men and women from the top military units that humanity has to offer. They will research the latest most advanced technology from weapons and armor to fighter crafts and underwater warfare. It is later decided to invite operatives from military units of other species of the OSA. This elite mission's force is known as **\*\*G.I JOE. \*\***It is publicly known as spec-ops.

**\*\*October 21, 2560: \*\***Section Four of ONI finds the Absolute Record. Director Halsey arrives aboard the \_Infinity\_ with the Janus Key and "The Knowing" to begin locating more Forerunner worlds. The Kig'Yar pirates now with serious low numbers attack hoping to gain the Forerunner technologies for themselves and turn the war in their favor. \_Infinity\_ and her battlegroup are able to defeat them.

**\*\*October 24, 2560:\*\*** OSA forces attack the last remaining Kig'Yar pirate colony. All pirates are wiped out. Artia is voted by her kind Queen and lead them. The OSA senate agrees with the Kig'Yar decision for a leader. The Kig'Yar Regime is officially formed.

**\*\*November 5, 2560: \*\***ONI puts forward a plan to help create a new counter-espionage and intelligence gathering for the OSA with the help of the Sangheili Ossoona division that was responsible for helping the covenant spy and intelligence gathering, they create a new organization that provides spying, counter-espionage, and information gathering for the OSA military and spec-ops. It is called the **\*\*Union\*\***.

**\*\*February 18, 2561: \*\***A spec-op fleet under Jiralhanae Chieftain Martin finds Installation 01, including a new alien race studying the ring. Warnings are sent out before the new race can do anything. Negotiations begin.

**\*\*February 19, 2561:\*\*** Installation 01 is confirmed safe. Ambassadors from the new race called the Mon-Calamari arrive at High Charity. They agree to join the OSA. The Quarren, a species from the same homeworld as the Mon-Calamari join the OSA as well.

**\*\*May 07, 2561: \*\***Director Halsey discovers something inside the Absolute Record, a power known as the Force. It is described as the life energy that is produced by all living things. It mainly operates in the same way magic does in the old Marvel Comics on Earth. This greatly interests the OSA council. The files also talked about an ancient order known as the Jedi that used this power back in the days of the ancient galactic human empire who were the guardians of peace and justice. Coordinates for the Jedi birthplace and homeworld **\*\*Tython\*\*** is found. The recon fleet arrives to a beautiful garden world where they find many temples and two cities that look as well

preserved as the day they were completed. They also find a species that looks like little green goblins, they are nicknamed LGM's or Little Green Men. The leader named Yoda says he is a Jedi master and that his species have preserved Tython since the firing of the Halo Array so that one day the Jedi Order may rise again better than before. It is decided by the senate and the OSA council to restart the Jedi Order, only this time it will be made up of force-sensitive's from all species in the OSA.

**\*\*January 5-17, 2562:\*\*** (The events of James Cameron's Avatar take place). Under the command of Rada 'Vadam, son of Thel 'Vadam, a small OSA fleet assault the world of Pandora under the control of the Human RDA Corporation. Several spec-ops members and groups take part. This is without authorization from the OSA. The RDA attempts to convict Rada 'Vadam. The OSA is shocked to discover that Pandora had sentient life. Vadam and several Spartans including the famed Master Chief relate stories of what the RDA had done to the planet and the race called the Navi. The testimony's of several humans who attempted to help the Navi further prove the crimes that the RDA committed. The Navi Neytiri and once human now Navi Jack Sully explain how their world would have been destroyed had it not been for Rada's intervention. The RDA are shut down, its assets seized, its private company backers are shut down, and most its members given life sentences. Neytiri accepts the OSA's invite to join. Repair teams are sent in to clean up the mess left by the RDA. Neytiri prevents the Navi from attacking the teams. A joint small settlement is planned by the OSA to uplift the Navi.

**\*\*June 15, 2565: \*\***Further study into the genetics of Vampires and Lycans has led to further advancements in unlocking the full human gene plan and genetic structure. The average human can live for up to 300 years. With the discovery and breakthrough with Forerunner nanites the average lifespan of all species doubles. Side effects from the treatment for their weakness to sunlight starts showing in Vampires. Some Vampires have gained the ability to transform like their Lycan cousins, sprouting wings and becoming more bat (think Vampires from Van Helsing only with Marcus's wings from Underworld Evolution).

**\*\*July 12, 2565: \*\***Plans are made by the senate to joint colonize worlds to bridge the gap between the many species in the OSA, a new way for everyone to cooperate and understand one another.

**\*\*November 16, 2565:\*\*** The first OSA joint colony **\*\*Sanctuary\*\*** is fully developed. Its capital city Pandorum's architect and buildings are a mixture of human skyscrapers along with the human orbital elevator is setup on the planet, the curve organic and sophisticated style the Sangheili and the other races have gotten used to building on their own planets. The colony becomes filled with the many species in the OSA. The colony is protected by UNSC ODPs and a fleet along with Sangheili ships and planetary plasma and MAC cannons. What would have taken one species a few years is done in a few months.

**\*\*July 16, 2566: \*\***The joint crew and fleet plan is put into action. To promote further cooperation and unity between the races of the OSA, 35% of all OSA vessels will have crews made up of multiple races. Joint fleets will be the main and emergency response fleets made up of vessels from multiple factions.

**\*\*April 22, 2567:\*\*** An alien race called Twi'leks arrives in the same

system as High charity. The Twi'leks are surprised that there was another race in the system and send their ambassadors over. Both humans and Twi'leks are surprised at their close resemblance. They are invited to join the OSA.

**\*\*March 2, 2567:\*\*** The Twi'leks joins the Orion Systems Alliance. The races of the OSA number 15.

**\*\*November 7, 2568:\*\*** The Human colony of **\*\*Coral\*\*** is attacked by what appears to be Twi'lek pirates, however they mostly capture civilians. They flee taking 500 civilians. The OSA discovers the Twi'leks practice slavery. They demand it be put to an end. Slaves and common Twi'leks are happy. Those in power ignore the demand and begin the Slavery war.

**\*\*June 3, 2570:\*\*** With the OSA's help the Twi'Lek government and Slavers are overthrown. All Twi'Lek slavers are killed. The now free Twi'Lek people elect Aleana'Ora to be their leader and become Queen.

**\*\*August 7, 2573:\*\*** Using coordinates found at the ark, expedition teams discover a forerunner structure on a world the Forerunners called Ilum. They are greeted by the Forerunner AI monitor of the facility, 243 Passive Anubis. Inside they find a large ice cavern filled with different colors of crystals. These crystals were Adegan and Kaiburr crystals, the crystals most commonly used in lightsabers.

**\*\*November 11, 2573: \*\***Several planets very similar to Pandora-Raydonia, Felucia, and Patitite Pattuna are discovered. The OSA tells the Navi and colonization plans are put in place for the Navies first colonies. The atmospheres are terraformed so the planets can support human life as well.

**\*\*March 3, 2574:\*\*** Thanks to the help of Passive Anubis the first lightsaber is created.

**\*\*March 5, 2575: \*\***The UEG makes first contact on Naboo with the Gungans. They agree to allow humans to colonize the surface of the planet as long as they are not treated as second-class citizens and have a voice. They later join the OSA.

**\*\*June 10, 2575:\*\*** Plans are made to use forerunner technology to create the first artificial planet made by the OSA. The planet will replace High Charity as the center of the OSA and the location of the both the senate and the council. It will also act as a fortress world. The planet will be called Coruscant.

**\*\*2575-2579: \*\***The OSA makes contact with the Zabrak, Cathar, Echani, Umbaran, Miraluka, Mirialan, Togruta, Nautolan, Iktotchi, Ithorian, Selkath, Wookiee, Rodian, Pantoran Selonian, Besalisk, Drall, and Kel Dor alien races. They all join the OSA. The number of races in the OSA now numbers 35. The **\*\*New Class Modernization Program \*\***is started in 2578 to design and build starships that increase the degree of standardization across internal features and external features. The products of this early phase of the plan included vessels that were essentially upgrades to existing, but common vessels. These would be followed by newer more powerful ships. A giant space station the Absolute Record calls **\*\*Centerpoint Station \*\***is found in the Corellian sector, the home system of the Selonians

and the Drall. The files at the Absolute Record say that the station has the power to move planets with its tractor beam, as it did with the five planets of the Corellian sector. Scientists arrive to study the giant station. The Mon-Calamari have invented their own ODP called the **\*\*Derilyn Space Defense Platform\*\***. These were scrapped after it was shown that they were too vulnerable to fighters should the shields fail. They are replaced by the **\*\*Golan Space Defense Platforms\*\***.

**\*\*April 24, 2580: \*\***The OSA for the first time makes first contact with two other Galactic powers that are at war, The Confederacy of Independent Systems (CIS) and the Mandalore Empire. The Confederacy is made up of various planetary and sectorial governments, as well as some mega-corporations, like the Neimoidian Trade Federation, the Muunilinst InterGalactic Banking Clan, Geonosian Industries, and the Skakoan Techno Union. The Mandalorian Empire is made up of the 23 Mandalorian warrior clans. Both sides have a large number of fleets and a vast number of armies. The CIS's armies are made up of battle droids. Mandalorian soldiers show a Sangheili warriors level of skill, some even show the prowess of a Spartan II. ONI discovers that the CIS keeps their people near the level of poverty by passing heavy taxes for the Corporations own prophet, perform inhuman experiments, and sell their populace into slavery to people like the Zygerrian Slaver Empire and the Trandosian Guild. The OSA decides to declare war on the CIS. The Galactic War begins.

**\*\*November 25, 2581: \*\***The **\*\*Quarren Isolation\*\* League\*\***, a pro-Quarren organization based on their homeworld of Dac (Mon-Calamari) that wanted to purge all OSA presence from their homeworld and rule over the Mon-Calamari, start a civil war on Dac with assistance from the CIS. While most Mon-Calamari and Quarren are united in peace thanks to the OSA, there were still those who harbored resentment towards the Mon-Cala for ruling over Dac for so long in the past. **\*\*G.I Joe \*\***(Spec-Ops) S.H.A.R.C/Mantis attack subs and SCUBA Marines led by Jedi Master Kit Fisto were sent to assist the Calamari Knights with the battle underwater, while Admiral Ackbar led the space battle. At the end of the day Admiral Ackbar had destroyed all CIS warships and Spec-Ops led by Kit Fisto were able to defeat and destroy the Isolation League. Dac was restored to peace, and a new alliance between the Mon-Calamari and the Quarren was formed. All of the Isolation League's planets, resources, and shipyards were seized as well.

**\*\*December 27, 2582: \*\***The war is not going well for the CIS. The OSA is glassing their droid factories and the Mandalorians are blockading their hyperspace lanes, starving them of supplies. Major Battles include the **\*\*Battle of Naboo\*\***, **\*\*Battle of Dac\*\***, **\*\*Battle of\*\* Geonosis\*\***, **\*\*Battle of Fondor\*\***, **\*\*Battle of Umbara\*\***, **\*\*Battle of\*\* Selonia**, **\*\*\*\*Battle of Saleucami\*\***, **\*\*Battle of\*\* Kashyyyk\*\*\*\***, and many others. Few battles ended with a CIS victory. In a last ditch effort to end the war, the CIS council called upon a new type of ship by the Isolation League before its destruction, and smuggled away to be completed by the CIS. This ship would serve as a flagship of one colossal armada of about 900 ships. Almost every battleship left in the CIS. The armada was to attack High Charity and the still under construction Coruscant to force the OSA to surrender. The flagship, and secret weapon, was a one of a kind Subjugator-class heavy cruiser known as the **\*\*\_Malevolence\_\*\***. At 4,845 km long it was equipped with 500 twin turbo laser batteries, but its real power was in its dual ion pulse cannons, capable of

disabling enemy ships, mounted on both sides of its hull. But ONI and Union operatives had been keeping close eyes on all CIS fleet activity and reported both the flagship and the armada to HIGH COM at High Charity. Spartan Blue and Noble teams were sent aboard a Prowler to secretly take control of the Malevolence and use it against the CIS armada. The plan went off without a hitch. Blue Team and Noble Team took control of the Malevolence and used it to decimate 40% of the armada once it reached High Charity. The\*\* High Charity Defense Fleet\*\* destroyed the rest while only suffering light casualties. A second, bigger Subjugator-class heavy cruiser called the \*\*Devastation\*\* was found in the data files of the Malevolence. The ship was located above the last CIS strong hold, \*\*Mustafar\*\*. The alien species known as the Keelish join the OSA.

**\*\*January 01, 2583: \*\***The CIS surrender and the Galactic War comes to an end. The OSA claims the territory held by the former CIS and frees all slaves. The Devastation is claimed by the OSA. For their inhuman crimes committed on numerous races during both their rule and the war, the Nemodians, Skakoan, Muuns, Zygerrians, and Trandosians are stripped of most of their advanced technology, most of their financial assets, all but a few damaged ships, and are banished from the Orion arm. This is accomplished by using Centerpoint Station's hyperspace tractor beam, which OSA scientists have concluded they can now operate. The homeworlds of the Nemodians, Genosians, Zygerrians, and Trandosians (as well as a few Nemodian Purse Worlds) are moved by Centerpoint Station's tractor beam out of the Orion arm into the other half of the galaxy. Before the Skakoans and the Muuns can be banished the Mandalorians attack their defenseless planets, causing the Skakoans and the Muuns to go extinct. This act by the Mandalorians leads to the second Galactic War or the Mandalorian War.

**\*\*January 20, 2583 - May 28, 2588: \*\***The Mandalorian War rages across the galaxy with the Mandalorians winning several swift victories in the Outer Rim before the OSA can fully act. One of these victories is the massacre of Cathar, where the Mandalorian Neo-Crusaders led by the leader of their empire **\*\*Mandalore the Ultimate\*\*** massacred the helpless Cathar. His right hand Cassus Fett also nuked the human colony of Serroco\*\*. **\*\*These acts of villainy fueled a burning fire into the hearts of the people of the OSA. Millions of volunteers enlisted into their respected military's and hundreds of ships were being cranked out at rates not even seen during the Human-Covenant War. The Jedi take up the role as Commanders and Generals once again and lead the fleets and armies against the Mandalorians. A human Jedi called Revan becomes the most famous generals and Jedi of the war. He proves himself not only to being one of the most powerful Jedi to date, but also as a master strategist by using the Mandalorians own tactics against them to extreme effect. Even though the Mandalorians are heavily outnumbered and on the retreat they still put up a hell of a fight. Lucian leads his Lycan special forces known as the alpha dogs, they use their Lycan forms to get in quick to disorganize and ravage the enemy. Selene fights alongside her newly trained Death Dealers doing shadow strikes behind enemy lines. They use their new forms to battle the Mandalorian Basilisk War Droids and keep them off the Lycans and OSA forces. Spartans are once again the ultimate weapon on the battle field, making entire Mandalorian Divisions disappear.**

**\*\*May 29, 2588:\*\*** During the**\*\* Fourth Battle of Taris\*\*** Revan meets an old friend he made during the war with the CIS, a Mandalorian

named Canderous Ordo. Canderous tells Revan that he has gathered a good number of the Clans under clan Ordo in an attempt to overthrow Mandalore the Ultimate. Revan arranges a meeting with the Senate. A deal is struck, if a stealth ship can get both Canderous and Revan to **Mandalore** undetected, than Canderous will challenge Mandalore the Ultimate to a duel. In accordance with the ancient Mandalorian laws if Canderous wins than he will have control of all Mandalorian forces. A peace treaty will then be arranged and Canderous will pledge the Mandalorians to the OSA. It is agreed upon. The Prowler Midnight gets Canderous and Revan to the capital city of Mandalore. After sneaking into the castle, aided by Revan's use of the Force, Canderous challenges Mandalore the Ultimate for the right to rule. The fight is intense and Canderous almost loses, but he manages to pull through his injuries and cuts off Mandalore's head with his own battleaxe. The war is over with Canderous claiming the title of **Mandalore the Preserver**. A peace treaty is signed and the Mandalorian Empire joins the OSA. Humanitarian aid and repair fleets are sent out to all the planets damaged by the war. The number of races in the OSA now numbers 37.

**September 21, 2588:** **Pirates** and underground crime syndicates have had almost free rein during the wars. They start attacking supply convoys and Outer Rim colonies. The OSA council sends 2/10 of its fleet to scourge the Outer Rim and destroy as many Pirates and crime syndicates as they can find. The fleet quickly finds the Hutt Cartel. The Outer Rim purges begin.

**September 22, 2588:** **Mandalore the Preserver** reveals Kamino and its cloning facilities to the OSA. An agreement is reached in which the Kaminoans are allowed to join the OSA, in exchange the OSA get to use their cloning facilities to help the Cathar, who are an endangered species, recover their numbers. Canderous also donates Mandalorian DNA from one of his top soldiers named Jango Fett to help raise the Mandalorians back to pre-war status. This action causes worry to sprout in the senate, fearing another war will break out. Canderous promises that there will be no war and that he intends to give half the Mandalorian clone army to the OSA to use in the Outer Rim purges. The Sangheili and UNSC don't agree with cloning soldiers but let the matter go. The senate and council agrees as long as other races can serve in the army as it will provide many needed jobs. Canderous agrees. The Zabraks, Cathar, Echani, Togrutas, and Keelish serve in the clone army, later known as the first joint Multiple Species Armed Forces. Zabraks, Sangheili, Echani, Mandalorians, and Humans serve as trainers for army. All forces are free to seek life outside of the military whenever they wish. **Rothana Heavy Engineering** **on Rothana** arranges a contract with Kamino to create new ships and war machines for the joint-clone army.

**July 4, 2289:** **The** **New Class Modernization Program** bears fruit. Chief engineers Walex Blissex and his daughter Lira Wessex, the heads of the **New Class Modernization Program**, create many new types of warships for the OSA. Their designs include the Delta-7B Aethersprite-class light interceptor and the Eta-2 Actis-class light interceptor, or the Jedi starfighters due to mainly being used by the Jedi Order. They also created the new Star Destroyer-class starships and. The Mon Calamari also made several new types of starships.

**December 5 2590:** **The Jedi Council** set up academies to teach people of the civilian sector the ways of the force on multiple

worlds. The lightsaber and energy sword become the Jedi's primary weapons. The OSA senate agree to give the facility on Ilum to the Jedi. An enclave is built on the colony of Dantooine, Ossus, and other planets throughout the OSA. Plans are made to build a Jedi Temple, to serve as the main headquarters for the Jedi, on Coruscant once its complete.

**\*\*August 04, 2592: \*\***The Hutt Cartel is destroyed, The Hutts are pushed back to their home territory known as Hutt space, and the Outer Rim purges result in most of the pirate and crime rings destruction. Any surviving pirates flee to Hutt Space, which is then quarantined and blocked off from the rest of the Orion arm. No Hutt has been seen outside Hutt Space since.

**\*\*August 10, 2592: \*\***Coruscant is completed and becomes the capital of the OSA. Citizens of all OSA races live settle on Coruscant. High Charity becomes the headquarters for the heads of all military forces in the OSA. The Jedi High Temple and the Senate/Council Building is built.

**\*\*February 20, 2595:\*\*** The first Clone-Joint Species Army (CJSA) completes its training. The army is launched from Kamino in the new **\*\*\_Acclamator I & II\_-class Assault s\*\*\*\*hips \*\*and \*\*\_Venator\_-class Star Destroyer\*\*** to tour and protect the Mid and Outer Rims.

**\*\*December 15, 2595: \*\***While touring the least explored regions of the Outer Rim along with several Venator-class Star Destroyers, Jedi Master Count Dooku intercepts a 15 year old Jedi distress signal. Dooku recognizes the signal belongs to his old friend Jedi Kight Ky Narec, who went missing 15years ago before the war with the CIS. The signal leads him to an uncharted planet. Dooku leads a platoon of CJSA troopers on to the planet where they find Ky Narec barley alive in the middle of a battlefield. With him is a young teenage girl from an unidentified alien race. Her name is Asajj Ventress.

**\*\*Present day 2650:\*\*** Humanity and the UNSC has entered a new Golden Age. Since humanity survived the Human-Covenant War, the creation of the Orion Systems Alliance, the studying and reverse engineering of advance Forerunner technology, the flood, the search for all the halo rings, and various wars the UNSC is truly a Galactic power to be reckoned with and prepared for anything, even the biggest discovery yet. A science team has discovered a device of unknown origins near the UNSC colony Shanxi.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>AN: Again, I'm sorry that this took longer than my last two chapters. I promised that this would be the last timeline before the story really gets started and there was a lot I wanted to include. I would like to once again thank \*\*\*\*JediSpectre177 and \*\*theblazinghope2235 for allowing me to use aspects of their stories in this chapter and in my fic. \*\*\*\*\*For those of you who have read HaloMass \*\*Effect: Ruptured Universe and \*\*\*\*Joined Universes, Different Outcomes you know what I'm talking about and which parts. \*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*To clear up something you all may be wondering here are the fleets for each OSA race. \*\*The Rebel fleet goes to the\*\* Mon-Calamari/Quarren, along with ships built by the Mon-Calamari

Shipyards in later eras. The Twi'leks and other Star Wars races get a mixture of The Old Republic, Galactic Republic (Clone Wars), and New Republic fleets and **vehicles**. The Drall, **Besalisk**, Navi, Miraluka, Ithorian, Selkath, Wookiees, and Keelish don't have ships of their own and rely on others. I will include a full account of all starships produced by the New Class Modernization Program in a later Codex.**\*\*\*\*\***

**\*\*\*\*\***On some final notes I've decided to add the Alliance to the Mass Effect verse. How they exist will be explored and explained later. I also want to say that some Star Wars characters will be different than in cannon. This is because events happened differently obviously. There will also be very few mentioning's of the Sith. Thank you everyone for waiting so patiently. I promise to upload the next chapter soon. **\*\*\*\*\***

#### 4. Chapter 4:First Contact-Battle of Shanxi

**A/N:** I told you I would post this chapter soon. The moment you've all been waiting for has arrived. It's time to start the main story. I also want everyone to know that I've decided not to add the Alliance to the Mass Effect part of this story after all. This chapter has similar or the same paragraphs as HaloMass Effect: Ruptured Universe by **JediSpectrel77** and Joint Universes, Different Outcomes by theblazinghope2235. If you've read them you know what I'm talking about. You'll also see I've added a little twist to the OSA's first contact with the Citadel races. Now let the party begin!**\*\***

**Halo, Mass Effect and the others belong to their respected owners. Some of the features in this chapter belong to JediSpectrel77 and theblazinghope2235.\*\***

\* \* \*

><p><strong>May 19, 2650<strong>

**Shanxi System**

**UNSC Halcyon MK.2-class light cruiser Dauntless**

**Main Bridge**

Captain Alex Rogers, a man at the age of 32 with dark black hair and standing at 5'9 was standing in front of the holographic images of the OSA council. He had no doubt that the senate was listening in as well back in the Senate Building on Coruscant. On the side screens also in attendance were the images of Arbiter Thel'Vadam, his son Jedi Master Rada'Vadam; wearing armor similar to that of his father, Jiralhanae Chieftain Martin, and Lord of Admirals Terrance Hood. They were most likely projecting from High Charity.

About a month ago one of the UNSC's deep space probes that was launched from Shanxi; the newest colony to be developed, was searching the asteroid field for possible mining; instead it found a strange artifact 15 kilometers long that had two long, curved 'arms' with what they believed to be a set of revolving rings in between them, covered in ice. The Captain had been assigned to protect the civilian workers charged with digging the artifact out of



the ice and science teams charged with studying it.

"What is your status Captain?" Asked the San 'Shyuum Councilor Remorse; her clothing was similar to that of what the High Prophets used to wear.

'The workers are finished cleaning the ice off the artifact," reported Rogers.

The Sangheili Councilor Xarew'Radei then asked. "Have our scientists discovered what it is and its purpose?"

"As far as they can tell it is not a weapon like the Halo's, they have asked for permission to activate it; I thought I'd better wait for your permission." Rogers replied.

'Permission granted justâ€¦ tell them to be careful, the last thing we need is for this device to blow up in our faces," said Richard Kobe the Human Councilor.

"We await your report," said Remorse and at that the link to Coruscant was terminated. Martin, Lord Hood, and Thel and Rada remained.

"How are you feeling Captain", said Lord Hood.

"Honestly Sir, I'm a little nervous. All I have is my cruiser and three frigates out here if something does happen," replied Rogers.

"Don't worry," said Lord Hood. "Captain Cutter and his fleet are just a short jump away should anything occur and you need help."

"I still don't understand him," said Martin. "He's an admiral, yet he wishes people to still refer to him as captain."

"Yes well, that's just how he wants it," said Thel. "Maybe it's a way for him to feel younger that he really is even if we all live longer now. Anyway, I think we should get to why we are still here."

"Yes," said Martin, "Captain as you may or may not know last week a Mon-Calamari cruiser entered a system home to a Robotic alien race". Rogers nodded; he had heard about that. He believed they had been called Transformers.

"The home world of the Transformers, **Cybertron**, is currently caught in a brutal civil war between two factions called the Autobots and Decepticons. The Decepticons attacked the cruiser but thanks to the actions of the Autobots, most personnel survived. Using one of their own star ships they brought the survivors back to High Charity."

Thel took over from Martin. "The leader of the Autobots, Optimus Prime has accepted our invitation for the Autobots to join the OSA and we have organized a fleet to take back Cybertron from the Decepticons. If all goes well with this device we would like Captain Cutter join us at Cybertron".

"If we don't need him here, I'll send him your way," said Rogers.

"Good, said Thel."

Martin then announced, "Admiral Lasky also informed us this morning that purging operations on the rediscovered UNSC colony of **\*\*Far Isle\*\*** have to the best of their abilities finally been completed. We will still maintain a strong military presence of the planet to help protect and train their makeshift military, but most of the space forces have been reassigned to other positions in OSA space; also, the colonists have built their tenth ship, which is also their first Dreadnought."

Rogers had indeed heard about that. It was still so unbelievable he thought. Everyone remembered the colony Far Isle was like a second Earth when it was completed after Reach in the 23rd century. But in 2400, the colony suffered a massive unexplained rebellion and the UNSC was unable to control it or send help in time. The rebellion had somehow obtained an incredible stockpile of nuclear missiles and launched them over the entire planet. HIGH-COMMAND declared the colony lost and inhabitable.

But in 2600, HIGH-COMMAND on Reach picked up an old activation signal from an old UNSC prototype orbital micro nuke missile satellite that was only used at Far Isle, seconds later they received a confirmed nuclear launch from said satellite. The new flagship of the Epsilon Eridani Fleet (or the Second Fleet) the Infinity-class warship Reach under the command of the prestigious Admiral Gregory White was sent to the signal's origin.

When the Reach arrived at Far Isle it not only found the satellite but more radio traffic coming from the planet. A planetary scan amazingly showed human life and structures on the surface. Radio chatter spoke of many things, but what got the White's attention was the talk of a group called the Brotherhood of Steel and their mission to protect the people and eventually restore some level of order to the world. They were against a group called the Enclave who wanted to kill or enslave all infected humans so that the pure untainted humans could rule. Groups similar to these two existed all over the planet.

Admiral White contacted the OSA military council on High Charity and had his A.I deliver all the information they had been able to gather. The brass was surprised about how colonists survived in underground vaults and out in what had become known as the wastelands of the world, about the wastelands being almost completely overrun with raiders and slavers. About Ghouls - mutant animals and Super Mutants; and the Force Evolutionary Virus that created them. After reading about the Brotherhoods fight against the Super Mutants and the Enclave HIGH-COM ordered Admiral White and his battlegroup to make contact with the planet, assist the Brotherhood against the Enclave then gather any political leaders that could be found for a summit with the UNSC.

Everything went off without a hitch. The satellite was destroyed, Admiral White relayed a message saying that they had come to help on all wasteland radios, made contact with the Brotherhood and assisted them with destroying the Enclave. Finding political leaders willing to meet was hard but it was done. The colony eventually rejoined the UNSC in exchange for humanitarian aid, exchange of technology, a military presence to purge the planet of the raiders-ghouls-and

Super Mutants, and terraforming of Far Isle to get rid of all the nuclear radiation. The UNSC and OSA had also gained access to Brotherhood and Enclave technology.

"Excellent, I believe that's everything, till next time gentlemen," said Thel turning to his son, everyone's hologram disappeared.

Rogers turned off the Quantum Entanglement Communicator or QEC for short. It was one of the many advancements the human race had made since the Human-Covenant War, Requiem, and the discovery of the Prothean ruins on Mars. A device that allowed near instant communication with any other QEC's in Human controlled space, all the way from Earth to the farthest out colony world. It was almost untraceable and only the military, government officials, and the Jedi had full access to it. There were QEC's for civilian use, but those came with restrictions. He then turned and sat down in the Captains chair. The comms officer alerted him of the activation of the artifact. "'Captain the scientists are ready'".

Captain Rogers went over tactical assessments in his head quickly. He had four ships under his command for this assignment, his own cruiser and three frigates. His ship was one of the new \_Halcyon Mk.2-class light cruiser\_, a remake and updated version of the old Halcyon cruiser, it retained most of the old look, only a little less boxy. It was built with Titanium-A3/Durasteel armor and carried all the upgrades of the \_Pillar of Autumn\_, and then some. The frigates were all \_Paris-class Heavy\_ \_Frigates\_; these were built with the same armor and had gone through a few weapons upgrades since the Human-Covenant War. Plus, considering reinforcements were just a short jump away he felt more confident that they could handle themselves should anything happen.

"'Very well," replied Rogers. Just then the holotank beside his Command Chair lit up as the Dauntless's A.I appeared on it. "I have the approach vectors Captain. Shall I download them into your Neural Implant?"

Captain Rogers looked at his ship's personal A.I, Scott, as it was called. He had taken the shape of Dr. Scott from the old Star Trek series. Thanks to the recovery and study of Forerunner technology A.I's could now live for centuries and had greater processing power than ever. He always spoke with a little irritation in his voice, but he was nice enough and was considered a valued member of the crew.

Rogers nodded. "Go ahead Scott."

Scott gave him a smile and suddenly John felt a cold feeling originating from the Neural Implant in the back of his head as information flooded his brain. The Neural Implant displayed an image on the retinas of his eyes and showed him the positions of the three \_Paris-class Heavy\_ \_Frigates\_ and the science team ships, in comparison to his own ship.

Rogers squinted his eyes and activated his Neural Implant.

\_(Making connectionâ€¦|connection acquired. Ready to receive message.)\_

\_This is Captain Alex Rogers of the \_Dauntless \_to\_ \_every vessel under my command. All frigates form up on my ship and prepare to project the science teams if necessary; \_\_they are going to activate the artifact.\_

\_\_(Connection Terminated.)\_\_

Rogers relaxed his eyes and leaned back into his Command Chair as his orders were carried out. This was probably the aspect he liked the most about the Neural Implants, which were mandatory to all UNSC military personnel. It allowed Commanding Officers to make mental connections with any other person with a military grade Neural Implant and then give them orders at the speed of thought. This allowed conversations, distributing orders, coordination with men in the field, and the sharing of information to be done as fast as someone could \_think\_, much faster than the old-fashioned methods.

It increased reaction times, increased precision and allowed for on the spot changes in tactics and troops and/or ship formations. It was in his honest opinion one of the greatest boons in the area of warfare since the invention of guns. This invention came from the Protheans after it was discovered that they could communicate through touch and thought as well as words.

'You would think the UNSC would send us another Cruiser than just three Frigates," asked the weapons officer.

'Lieutenant the one thing the UNSC has learned from all our past experiences is we are always prepared. You don't know it but there are ships ready to jump in at a moment's notice if things go south for us, "said Rogers recanting what the Arbiter had said.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Exodus Cluster<strong>

\*\*Utopia system\*\*

\*\*Turian Patrol fleet\*\*

Tonn Actuss, a Turian captain in the Turian Hierarchy shuddered in his chair as his ship was hit by another mass accelerator slug. "Damage report," he called out.

The sensor operator called over to him, "Kinetic barriers are holding at 70%! Core systems are slowly overheating! Fleet wide damage is being reported! We've lost another Frigate and a Cruiser.

Actuss swore to himself. The hierarchy had received intelligence from an STG scout ship that a Batarian pirate fleet was hiding in the Exodus Cluster and were planning to activate a dormant Mass Relay. He was put in charge of a fleet of 18 ships, twelve Frigates and six Cruisers, to deal with the pirates. When they arrived in the system however, the pirate fleet was bigger than the STG had said it would be. The Pirate fleet numbered at ten Frigates, eight Cruisers, a Dreadnought, and twelve Freighters, a total of 31 ships, 19 if you don't count the freighters which Actuss didn't. Although the force was greater than they were told Actuss wasn't deterred. He was a proud Turian; military life ran in his family, he was very serious

when it came to upholding the law in Council space and will do just about anything to make sure everyone follows it.

When the battle began the Pirate Dreadnought had destroyed two of his Frigates right off the bat. His fleet answered back by firing their main guns destroying two Frigates and a Cruiser. Then Disruptor torpedoes were exchanged further decimating the pirate fleet, but with the Turians taking damage as well. Slugs were once again exchanged, and now the battle now stood with the Turians with ten Frigates and four Cruisers with the Batarians numbering at one Dreadnought, seven Frigates, and six Cruisers with the Freighters unharmed in the background.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Exodus Cluster<strong>

**\*\*Utopia system\*\***

**\*\*Batarian Hegemony/Pirate Fleet\*\*, Cruiser \*\*\*\*\_Top of the Food Chain\_**

**\*\*Commanding Officer - Commander Banto.\*\***

Commander Banto Kafri was not having a good day. He was a respected officer in the Batarian Hegemony. His fleet had been paid very handsomely by the Hegemony to activate the dormant Relay 314 and scout the other side for new resources, slaves, or a combination of the two. What had started as a simple operation had turned into a disaster when a Turian fleet had showed up and engaged them. His fleet had taken damage but at least the Freighters were unharmed. Those cost him a lot of money to get. That and the mercenary groups that had been lost would have had to be reimbursed.

The sensor operator called over to him, "Kinetic Barriers are holding at 60%! We have lost three Frigates and two Cruisers! The Freighters are not harmed but we won't be able to protect them in another engagement!"

Banto grimaced. He had to activate the Relay and get the Freighters through it or this whole operation would have been for nothing.

His thoughts were interrupted when the sensor operator called out, "Sir, the Relay has been activated, but we didn't do it."

Banto quickly turned his head. "What? What do you mean we didn't activate the Relay?"

"Scans show that the Relay activated from the other side. A probe came out of it. I think there is an undiscovered race on the other side."

Banto filed that away for later, fate had given him a way out and he was going to use it.

He quickly came up with a plan, it wasn't a plan he liked but it was his best chance to salvage the situation before the Turians attacked again.

"My ship will take five Frigates, another Cruiser and the Freighters

and head through the Relay. The rest of the fleet will stay behind to hold off the Turians."

The crew stared at him until he barked, "DO IT!"

Banto sighed, knew he was most likely dooming the rest of his fleet to death, but there wasn't much else he could do. His plan was to have the Frigates and the other Cruiser spread out in whatever sector the Relay lead to and distract the Turians that were sure to follow. Meanwhile, if there was an undiscovered race on the other side, his ship would escort the freighters to their world and they would go slaving. It may not be a perfect plan, but it was the only one he had.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Exodus Cluster<strong>

**\*\*Utopia system\*\***

**\*\*Turian Cruiser \*\*\_The Hammer\_**

**\*\*CIC\*\***

"Sir, Relay 314 has been activated and the Batarian pirates have split up their fleet, two Cruisers, five Frigates, and the twelve Freighters are moving towards the Relay and the remaining two Frigates, four Cruisers and the Dreadnought are heading towards us staying in our line of fire," yelled the sensor officer to Actuss.

Actuss furiously said, "Those Batarians will pay for breaking council law."

"Sir, sensors showed that an object similar to a probe came out of the Relay when it was activated. I don't think the Batarians activated the relay as the probe came from the other side, we may be looking at a first contact."

Actuss absorbed this information and thought carefully. If there was a new race on the other side of the Relay then they must be subdued for breaking council law. The only problem was that the Batarians had a head start; in addition, he still had seven ships including a Dreadnought to deal with. Suddenly inspiration struck Actuss, it was like the Spirits had given him the answer, if he could deal with the remaining pirate ships fast enough and without taking too many losses, he could save this new race from the Batarians, which would make them look like heroes and perhaps gain the Hierarchy a new client race.

"Have all Cruisers target the Dreadnought; it must be taken out if we are to proceed. Once the Dreadnought is destroyed all surviving Cruisers and Frigates will launch a full barrage of slugs from their main guns and Disruptor torpedoes at the enemies Cruisers and Frigates.

"Yes Sir, replied the comms officer."

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Shanxi System<strong>

**\*\*UNSC Halcyon MK.2-class light cruiser\*\*\_ Dauntless\_**

**\*\*Main Bridge\*\***

Captain Alex Rogers was just finishing reading the reports the scientists had sent him on the artifact. The report indicated it was a transportation device capable of sending an object a thousand light years instantaneously to another star system. 'Are these reports accurate,' he asked.

The \_Dauntless's \_A.I Scout appeared at his side in a full size holographic form. "Yes they are sir, the scientist assure me that they are accurate. This is an interesting device; it will improve much for OSA."

As everyone started to celebrate the success of the mission the artifacts inner rings started moving rapidly and out came nineteen unidentified ships.

Any other man would have panicked at the prospect of such a sudden First Contact scenario. Not Alex Rogers. He quickly activated his Neural Implant and gave his orders. "\_Standard First Contact protocol, assume hostility! Every ship activate your shields, \_ready weapons and put up your firewalls. Contact the scientists and tell them to move behind my ship." \_

The crews on the ships under his command frantically followed his orders and as soon as all the ships had finished activating their shields weapons and cyber warfare systems did the Relay finish activating and out came an alien fleet. The ships had a more sleek if not bulky appearance then Human ships and had a deep red colored plating.

Scott quickly analyzed the fleet and relayed his findings towards every Captain, AI and marine in the fleet. "Unknown alien fleet consisting of 19 ships. I count five Frigates, two Cruisers and twelve freighters that seem to have been outfitted for combat. What's interesting is that the ships seem to follow the Prothean system of ship sizes."

That caught the captain's attention. "How do you know that?"

Scott replied, "Because my scans detected that their ships are powered by element zero (or eezo or short), which we all know was the bases of all Prothean technology so I think it's a reasonable assumption. Now that the Relay is active I can detect that it is powered by shitload of eezo."

Alex processed this information in what seemed like seconds to his crew. Thoughts were running in his head. Everyone in the OSA knew from the archives on Mars that the Protheans used eezo for just about everything. While it had its uses, the field of use was judged to be too limited. In the OSA, all ships were equipped with a miniature Mass Effect drive core; these were equipped to the emergency thrusters, lightening the ships mass and increasing the ships maneuverability in battle. It was also connected to some special cannons. But other than that eezo was considered little more than a waste product that was created as a result of the waste created

during the forging process of titanium grade ship armor, durasteel, and beskar (Mandalorian Iron). The OSA had entire storehouses filled with the stuff and nothing to use it for.

Filing this away for later the captain addressed the task at hand. "Scott ready the First Contact package and send an emergency FTL message back to HIGH-COMM. I want you to take control of the ships thrusters. If the alien fleet fires I need you to get my ship out of the way."

"All ready done," Captain, said Scott seriously over their mental connection. "HIGH-COMM has been alerted to the new development and I have taken control of the ships thrusters. I have the First Contact package ready to be sent at your command."

Alex nodded. "Send the package."

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Shanxi System<strong>

**\*\*Batarian \*\*Hegemony\*\*/Pirate Fleet\*\***. Batarian Cruiser \_Top of the Food Chain\_

Commanding Officer - Commander Banto

The moment the Batarian Cruiser arrived through the Relay warning seines were going off on deck as the sensors picked up the unknown fleet holding position a fair distance from the Relay.

"Will someone cut of that racket!" Captain Banto hollered over the alarms and the frantic voices of his crew.

The alarm mercifully cut off and the Sensor Operator immediately started reporting what they had found. "Commander! An unknown fleet is holding position at about 100,000 meters from the Relay. The fleet consists of four \_Cruisers\_."

On screen." Banto ordered. One of the Ensigns tapped in some commands on his console and an image appeared on the main screen which showed the mentioned unknown fleet.

Banto closely studied the unknown fleet. The ships in the fleet looked like no ship he had ever seen before. They all had grey/white hulls and looked boxy with their sharp lines and uncompromising designs.

"Commander!" Another Ensign called for his attention. "We are receiving an information package from the largest Cruiser. It's being transmitted to every vessel in the fleet. I think it is a First Contact package."

Banto pondered this for a moment. Deciding that he needed more information before acting he gave his crew the following orders. "Scan the entire System. I want to know if they have more ships in the vicinity and if there are any colonies in the System." While his crew went to work Banto turned back towards the Ensign. "What is in the information package?"

The Ensign gave the data being displayed on his console a quick over



view."A variety of images. Depicting culture, art, biology, science, unity. All images positive in nature. No hostile appearance. Clearly a First Contact package."

A grin formed on Banto's face. These aliens were peaceful, which meant that they would be much easier to enslave as you could install fear and manners into civilized beings much easier then into wild beasts.

"Commander." His XO called for him."We have finished scanning the System. There are a few small ships heading towards the biggest alien Cruiser. One has already pulled behind it. There are no other ships in the System except for the ones in the fleet facing us. Also, out of the six planets in the System one has a sizable population. Considering the situation it is likely a colony world."

Banto's grin grew wider. This was possibly the greatest find he could have hoped for. If it was only a colony, then there were bound to be more of these planets. An entire alien empire was for the Hegemonies taking. But first he needed to take care of the alien fleet. And he needed to do it fast or the Turians would catch up to him.

He felt confident enough that he could take out the aliens Cruisers, and once he had taken the colony he would propel his name into legend as the Batarian who led the Hegemony into a crusade for untold amounts of recourses and slaves. Maybe even leading the Hegemony into a new golden age.

His mind was set.

"Prepare the main gun! Engage the thrusters and get me a firing solution on those small alien vessels. Then reline and fire on those Cruisers! We are going slaving! For the Hegemony!"

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Shanxi System<strong>

\*\*May 19, 2560\*\*

\*\*UNSC Halcyon MK.2-class light cruiser\*\*\_ Dauntless\_

\*\*Main Bridge\*\*

\_ "The alien vessels have spiked in energy! I think they are readying to fire!" \_The Navigation Officer shouted frantically over her Neural Implant, everyone in the fleet hearing her clearly over the now fleet wide mental link.

The largest alien vessels suddenly accelerated forwards, the rest of the alien fleet following not far behind.

\_ Weapons fire! \_The Sensor Officer screamed in warning.

The alien Cruisers launched a salvo of Disruptor torpedoes at the science and civilian ships that had not yet reached the \_Dauntless. \_Almost instantly the vessels were destroyed.

" 'WHAT THE HECK JUST HAPPENED," shouted Alex, screaming at the top of his lungs.

The sensors operator turned to face the captain. "Captain the alien Cruisers launched what I believe to be Disruptor torpedoes. The same kind of eezo powered missiles that were found on the Prothean Frigates that were found in the archives. They destroyed the civilian and science team's ships that hadn't yet reached safety.

Alex Rogers was enraged; they had just attacked and killed innocent civilians. He took a deep breath, "They will pay for that!" he thought to himself. He turned on his Neural Implant and spoke to the whole fleet, "All ships weapons free, I repeat weapons free. Fire on your closets ship. Once you have fired your all your bow Mass Effect Cannons fire your Archer missiles. Let's kill the bastards." His link then deactivated. "Scott charge the Macs and get one through four Archer missile pods ready," said Alex.

"No need sir I, have the Macs already charged, readying Archer missiles."

Alex smiled, The Mac gun was one of the UNSC's primary weapons on ships. A hundred years ago the Mac gun was capable of firing a 600-ton ferric-tungsten projectile with a depleted uranium core at 30,000 meters per second it had a standard destructive output of 64.53 kilotons (TNT-equivalent)! Today the standard Mac gun on most ships can fire a 750-ton tungsten round at 75,000 meters per second with a destructive force of 86.73 kilotons, but requires a three minute cool down time. While his Halcyon MK.2-class light cruiser and Paris-class Heavy Frigates didn't carry that kind of firepower his ship could still fire three 300-ton tungsten rounds in one go. These rounds acted like shield piercing rounds with the first and second rounds damaging the shields while the third pierced through the shields and hit the ship. The best part was that it only required one minute of cooling down and charging. Or he could still fire two 600-ton rounds in one go with a three minute cool down period.

The bow mounted Mass Effect Cannons, or as they were sometimes called the Mass Effect Enhanced Mini-Mac Cannon, was inspired by the Mass Effect Cannons that served as the primary ship weapon for the Protheans. These guns were Mini-Mac Cannons about a quarter the size of a regular Mac but still worked like a regular Mac, and were enhanced by element zero, thus the name. They could fire 250-ton rounds every two seconds, with the kinetic energy of 57 kilotons of TNT and traveled at 6075 kilometers per second (1.5% the speed of light). Far superior to any Dreadnought in the entire Batarian or Turian navy. Longer and larger ships could carry even longer and more powerful Mass Effect Cannons. These were placed on all UNSC ships, from Corvettes to the famous Infinity-class heavy warships, and were the only thing their Mass Effect drive cores were connected to other than the emergency thrusters. Even some other OSA ships carried Mass Effect Enhanced Mini-Mac Cannons.

"FIRE!"

Two of the three rounds fired by the Dauntless's three bow mounted Mass Effect Enhanced Mini-Mac Cannons struck one of the aliens Frigates head-on. One struck in the ship's bow and shredded straight through the ships Kinetic barriers and penetrated the armor and surged into the ships command bridge, immediately killing its crew. The second struck at about the same angle and gutted the vessel from bow to stem and went on to obliterate the Freighter behind it.

One other struck a Freighter head on and destroyed it out right. And another struck a Frigate at a shallow angle, unobstructed by the ships Kinetic Barriers; it sheared the ships entire port side of, exposing it to the vacuum of space. Thanks to the sudden decompression the ship swung sharply to the right and struck another Frigate which screeched and buckled under the impact. Both ships exploded in a brilliant show of fire.

One round went wide and disappeared into the fast emptiness of space while the last struck another Freighter and destroyed it. Two of the aliens Freighters were too close to the one that the \_Dauntless\_ had just destroyed and were consumed in the explosion. One survived with its Kinetic Barriers close to the breaking point and the other Freighter, one that had already been struck by one Mass Effect Cannon accelerated round from a \_Paris-class Heavy Frigate\_, was immediately sheared open and exploded.

The aliens tried to pay the UNSC back, but their Main Cannons seemed unable to land a solid hit. Even when they did the UNSC's shields seemed to be able to take a great deal of damage.

Then the \_Halcyon\_ and the \_Paris's\_ fired their main Mac cannons. The massive rounds flew towards the alien fleet and dealt massive amounts of damage. The three rounds fired from the \_Dauntless\_ each destroyed an alien Freighter, two of the rounds continued on and destroyed another Freighter each. One Heavy Frigate managed to destroy an alien Frigate while the other two combined their fire and destroyed an alien Cruiser and the last Frigate.

Both fleets continued to advance on the other and continued to fire in abandon. Mac rounds and Mass Accelerator slugs left their Cannons every two seconds and peppered their enemy's vessels. Kinetic Barriers and Energy shields flared into existence, desperately trying to protect the ships from the enemy's onslaught.

Captain Rogers felt the \_Dauntless\_ dance under him as a fresh wave of slugs struck the \_Dauntless's\_ Energy shields. "Damage report," he called out.

"Energy shields are holding at 87%. Our Frigates are reporting that their thrusters have blown out and have to recharge them. Their shields are holding at 72% for the \_Anubis\_, 80% for the \_Denver\_, and 60% for the \_Hydra\_. We have destroyed 15 alien ships, all five of their Frigates, one of their Cruisers, and nine Freighters. That leaves only one Cruiser and three Freighters. All ships are prepared to fire missiles." Scott reported swiftly.

Alex could only smile. He was very glad that Energy shields had been improved and strengthened in the last hundred years or his Frigates and most likely his own ship would have been destroyed by the alien's onslaught. Ever since the Mon Calamari shared Deflector (Ray) and Particle shield technology scientists and engineers were set to work to see if the shields could be combined. After years of research and lots of trial and error they were successful. Energy, Defector, and Particle shields were combined to form a new kind of shield. Its official name was the **\*\*Enhanced\*\* Energy-Particle Shield\*\***, but they were still called Energy shields. The three shield types overlapped and combined with each other, creating a much stronger protection barrier around the ship or other structures against

lasers, plasma, light-heavy projectiles, EMP's, Ion blasts, space debris, and radiation. Due to studying Forerunner technology shields could now be formed in the exact same shape of the ship instead of the old bubble shape. This saved a lot of power and allowed that saved power to make the shields even stronger.

He still couldn't figure out why the aliens had attacked or even why they hadn't responded to the First Contact package. Every other first contacted always started with communications before hostility's; heck even before the Covenant war, members of the Covenant went down to Harvest to discuss trade, something wasn't right here. But he could get the answer later. Right now he had a battle to finish.

"All ships fire Archer missiles. Let's finish them off."

Since the end of the Human-Covenant War Archer missiles had undergone major changes as well. The size of the missiles had been reduced to allow more to fit in the pods, despite this though each missile pack more of a punch, three times of that of the Human-Covenant era Archers. On Cruisers there were more than five hundred pods containing 75 missiles, each missile contained plasma that was designed to do damage to Energy shields.

On the outside of the Dauntless four hidden compartments opened up and out shot four pods racing to the alien ships, in the four pods contained over three hundred missiles.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Shanxi System<strong>

**\*\*Batarian Cruiser \*\*\_Top of the Food Chain\_**

Banto got back in his command chair having fallen out after that last Mac round impact holding his bleeding temple. He could not believe how the battle had gone. When his fleet had destroyed those small vessels with the Disruptor torpedoes, without them impacting on any shields, he had thought that this battle was going to be a piece of cake. But he was so very wrong. He had lost almost all of his ships while the aliens hadn't lost any. More frightening was that the aliens vessels were apparently armed with multiple main bow mounted Mass Effect Cannons as opposed to the galaxy wide standard of one main bow mounted Mass Effect Cannon and weren't slowing down of their pounding of his forces. With the amount of ordinance that they had already fired and continued to fire even now their ships should have been molten from the inside out as the heat and radiation that should have been building with each shot and evasive maneuver that they had made should have fried their heat dispersal systems beyond repair at this point.

What Banto didn't know was that most UNSC ships were equipped with a special coolant mix that is designed to handle extreme heat, and also serves as a way to keep radiation contained without becoming toxic and is reusable so there's no need to dump the coolant even if it's used constantly. UNSC ships also have special heat recycler systems that turn the heat into spare energy to serve as a backup if needed. As such UNSC vessels don't have heat issues in most if not all cases. All UNSC Corvettes and most Frigates were equipped with a heavily modified Prothean designed coolant mix based of ammonia together with the heat recycling systems instead of the special coolant mix

developed by Humanity because it was cheaper and more than sufficient for the relatively small \_Corvettes\_ and \_Frigates\_. All OSA warships had the same upgrades.

"Damage report!" He barked at the Sensor Operator.

"Kinetic Barriers are barely holding at 11%! Core systems are overheating! The entire fleet except for us and three Freighters has been destroyed! Hull breaches on Decks 3-12, sealing now.

Banto was silent. This battle was lost, that much he knew. He just hoped that the Hegemony wouldn't suffer later for his actions here today."Helm. Plot a course back to the Relay. Hail, all the ships. We are retreating." His crew nodded and went to do their assigned duties.

The Sensor Operator suddenly shouted in alarm."Commander! We have a problem. I'm detecting missiles heading right for us!"

Banto looked out the window and saw sixteen oversize missiles heading towards what little remained of his fleet. "Activate the Guardian lasers and channel all power into the thrusters. Get my ship out of here!"

Just as the weapons officer was about to turn the Guardian lasers on, the Batarans were shocked to now see over 1,200 missiles come out of the pods. The Guardian lasers tried desperately to shoot down the missiles but there were far too many. For every missile and torpedo they shot down five more took its place. Even as the Batarian ships tried to dance in between the walls of missiles and torpedoes their Guardian systems started to overheat and were quickly reduced to but a fraction of their former efficiency.

The Batarian fleet was swallowed by the missiles and torpedoes like a ship under a tidal wave. When the dust cleared every ship was destroyed.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>UNSC Halcyon MK.2-class light cruiser<strong>\_  
Dauntless\_

**\*\*Main Bridge\*\***

"Congratulations Captain, said Scott. The alien fleet has been completely destroyed."

"Thanks Scott," replied Alex. He was still torn up about most of the science and civilian ships being destroyed and the people dying. But still, he couldn't help but grin over the fact that he had just won his first naval engagement. And against an alien unknown force no less. Their vessels didn't seem very capable of battle and that puzzled him. But he could worry about that later. Now, was the time to see if he could get some answers.

"Scott contact High Charity and ask them to send some feelers. Also, have the last of the science ships recover any alien body's they can find."

"Yes Captain," the A.I quickly replied. "Done, High Charity has been

notified. Should I contact Admiral Cutter and inform him about what has happened?"

Before Alex could answer the Relay flared up again and out came nine new unidentified ships.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Exodus Cluster<strong>

**\*\*Utopia system\*\***

**\*\*Turian Cruiser \*\*\_The Hammer\_**

**\*\*CIC\*\***

**\*\*Two minutes ago.\*\***

Tonn Actuss sighed to himself. His fleet had finally destroyed the last Batarian pirate ship. But this victory had come at a price he hadn't expected to pay. When this operation started he had been in command of twelve Frigates and six Cruisers. Now only half of his fleet remained, six Frigates and three Cruisers. But he had to move on. He still had a job to do.

"Get the fleet into formation we're going after the Batarians that escaped through the Relay."

The fleet moved flawlessly following Tonn's orders to the letter. Once all ships were in place they headed through the Relay, hoping to put down the lawbreaking Batarians.

When they exited transit at first all Actuss could see was the remains of the Batarian fleet. Most of the ships had been reduced to small chunks or space dust. Only a few were still recognizable.

"What happened here?" Actuss asked no one in particular.

"Sir, the Batarian fleet has been destroyed. I'm detecting a small fleet of unidentified vessels approaching our position."

Actuss stood in front of the projector looking at the several small ships. They weren't like any ship he had ever seen and he didn't see now they could have destroyed the Batarians. But still, the Batarian fleet lay vaporized before him and this new race had broken council law by activating a dormant Mass Relay. Best not to take chances. He then noticed that they were starting to flee.

"Target those ships they belong to those who activated the Relay. They have broken council law and must be punished. Scan this system and find me their homeworld."

The Turian fleet moved to carry out its leaders orders. The ships of the unidentified race were hit by a salvo of Disruptor torpedoes. Almost instantly the vessels were destroyed.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>UNSC Halcyon MK.2-class light cruiser<strong>\_

Dauntless\_

**\*\*Main Bridge\*\***

"WHAT THE HECK JUST HAPPENED," shouted Captain Alex Rogers, screaming at the top of his lungs.

The sensors operator turned to face the captain, "'Captain nine unidentified contacts have come out of the artifact, they have destroyed the remaining civilian and science team's ships. They don't look like the other ships we fought. I believe this is another first contact with a new alien race."

Alex was completely pissed, but also at the same depressed. All of the scientists and civilians had died in two attacks on his watch. He looked out the window and noticed that these new ships looked like giant birds. They had the same classifications as the fleet he had just destroyed. Only there were no Freighters and only six Frigates and three Cruisers.

"These aliens picked a bad day to mess with me. Fire the Main Mac, full 600 round at one of their Cruisers. Load Archer pods A-F. And prepare to contact Admiral Cutter on my command."

"Yes sir. Mac Gun is prepared to fire and Archer pods are loading." Scott quickly replied.

"FIRE!"

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Turian Cruiser <strong>\_The Hammer\_

**\*\*CIC\*\***

Captain Actuss watched as the last of the unidentified race ships had been destroyed. " They don't even have shields" he thought to himself, "this is going to be easy".

The sensor operator called over to him, "Sir I am detecting four other unidentified..." Was as far as he got before the space outside was filled with fire as one of the Turian Cruisers, the \_Spartus,\_ was destroyed.

"WHAT JUST HAPPENED!" roared Actuss running to the Sensor operator.

"I don't know sir, there are four other unidentified vessels out there, bringing them up on the projector."

Actuss stood in front of the projector looking at the four vessels, "How can a race that don't use shields, build ships that large and be able to fly them" he thought to himself. One Turian estimated the three smaller Cruisers length was 535 meters, width 199 meters, and height was 112.3 meters; the biggest Cruiser's length 1,172 meters, width 352 meters, and height 414 meters.

Actuss now knew that these had to be the ships that had destroyed the Batarians; or, at least the surviving ships. No new race could build only four ships and destroy the Batarian fleet that now lay in

rubble. He turned and faced his coms officer, ''tell the Frigates to swarm the three smaller vessels while we and the \_Midnight Shadow\_, handle the bigger one''. The Turian acknowledged this and sent the message to the other ships. "They will pay for destroying a ship of the Hierarchy."

\* \* \*

><p><strong>UNSC Halcyon MK.2-class light cruiser<strong>\_  
Dauntless\_

**\*\*Main Bridge\*\***

The crew were celebrating the distinction of the Turian Cruiser. That would teach the alien scum. Captain Rogers had slightly calmed down with the Cruisers destruction. "Nothing makes sense today," he thought. "Every other first contact always started with communications before hostility's; and yet we've meet two alien races that just attacked us for whatever reason."

Looking at the battle on the holo projector he noticed six of the smaller ships breaking off course heading towards his three Frigates, the two bigger ones heading toward the \_Dauntless\_.

"Scott are the Archer missiles ready," asked Rogers.

"Yes sir, firing now".

Outside the \_Dauntless\_ four Archer missiles fired and raced towards the Turian fleet.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Turian Cruiser <strong>\_The Hammer\_

**\*\*CIC\*\***

The sensors operator detected what appeared to be missiles of some kind that had launched from the biggest Cruiser.

''Captain I am detecting what appears to be four large missiles heading to the Cruiser \_Midnight Shadow\_,'' said the operator.

Though Actuss was still angry about the loss of one of his Cruisers he couldn't help but chuckle. "What do they hope to hit, a planet with those oversize things, just get our and the \_Midnight Shadow's\_ Guardian lasers to shoot them down.''

Just as the weapons officer was about to turn the Guardian lasers on, like the Batarians before them, the Turians were shocked to now see over three hundred missiles come out of the pods. The Guardian lasers attempted to shoot down the missiles but were too over whelmed and only took down fifty-eight. The other two hundred and forty-two slammed against the \_Midnight Shadow\_. The ships Kinetic barriers protected it from most of the explosion, but not the hot plasma coming from the number of missiles, scorching the ablative armor causing hull breaches and other damages to the ship. Several missiles successfully hit the stern as the Kinetic Barriers went down causing a large hull breach but not destroying the \_Midnight Shadow\_.



If Captain Actuss was not furious before he was now, he was furious that one of his own ships had been destroyed and the other taken serious damages. ''It would seem we underestimated this new race,'' he said. ''Tell the Frigates to continue as planed and target those three ships while we handle the bigger one! Fire Disruptor torpedoes, it's time to return the favor for what they did to my Cruisers."

\* \* \*

><p><strong>UNSC Halcyon MK.2-class light cruiser<strong>\_  
Dauntless\_

**\*\*Main Bridge\*\***

Captain Rogers continued to follow the battle on the holo projector; he was examining the damage to the alien ship by the Archer missiles.

''This is interesting," said Scott. ''By studying the impact of when the Archer missiles collided and after; it would seem their shields are not the same as ours as the plasma was able to pass right through them. I noticed this as well when the Archers destroyed the last ships of the other fleet.''

The captain turned his head and looked at Scott. ''So what you're saying is their shields protect them from kinetic weapons but not plasma," Asked Alex.

''Yes, but as we saw a Mac round was able to take a ship down in one go, it was probably too much for their shields to handle."

Rogers did not share Scott's optimism, "Or it was a critical area that the Mac hit."

"Sir incoming fire from the larger vessels," shouted the sensors operator. "Disruptor torpedoes detected."

"Scott!" "Get the CIWS online and shoot those missiles down," ordered Rogers.

The Halcyon-class Cruisers six point defense guns and M6 Grindell/Galilean Nonlinear Rifle system open fired and managed to destroy the missiles before they got within a hundred meters of the ship.

"Missiles have been destroyed captain."

That was good news for Alex. He knew the damage that Disruptors could do to ships. Even though he was more than confident that his shields could more than take the damage, he wasn't willing to be reckless. He was glad that the M6 Grindell/Galilean Nonlinear Rifle or Spartan Laser had been converted into an anti-missile and fighter system and incorporated into every ship in the UNSC. It greatly improved their ships CIW's capabilities.

"Good work Scott, replied Alex. Send that message to Admiral Cutter and tell him we need help. Is the Mac Gun ready to fire?"

"Ready and waiting captain. The message has been sent and Cutter is on his way. ETA is 30 seconds."

"Sir, the Hydra is being overwhelmed and their shields are down to 30%" shouted the comms officer.

Rogers looked at the holo projection screen and saw the alien Frigates swarming his Frigates, with the Hydra taking the brunt of the attack. He opened a Neural link with the Hydra's captain.

"Captain Rogers this is Captain Littlefield we are being overwhelmed by the enemy; laser cannons and defense guns are picking the missiles out of the sky, but there's too many, shields will soon collapse, there at 18%.'"\_

\_'Captain, brake off and retreat back to Shanxi, Admiral Cutter is only 10 seconds out, get your crew too transfer power from the heat recycler and non-critical systems to the shields and try to get the Anubis to give you some covering fire, "said Rogers. The link then terminated.\_

Suddenly, around the battlefield appeared the spherical black hole appearance of several slipspace portals. Five UNSC Heavy Frigates exited first, close to the Anubis, Thor, and Hydra. Then two Marathon-class Heavy Cruisers exited next followed by the two and a half kilometer long UNSC Spirit of Fire.

The crew of the Dauntless began to celebrate in advance with Admiral Cutter's arrival. This quickly died though as a shot from a Mass Accelerator weapon from one of the Turian Cruisers impacted on the Hydra's shields causing a lot of space dust to form blocking the Hydra from sight. When the dust cleared the Hydra was still there but scans showed that its shields were gone. It was obvious that the extra power to the shields had saved the ship, but it may not survive another hit.

"Open a line to Cutter NOW!" shouted Rogers. "And fire the Mac on that damaged alien Cruiser. No one else is dying on my watch today."

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Turian cruiser <strong>The Hammer

\*\*CIC\*\*

Actuss was not happy. His missiles had been shot down by the enemy's ship, which seemed to possess a Guardian laser system that had an incredible range of thousands of meters. That even outstripped the Salarians who had the most advanced Guardian lasers in Council Space and had a range of 400 meters.

He saw the Midnight Shadow fire on one of the enemy's smaller Cruisers and it looked like it had been destroyed. He was shocked to see that the ship had survived, but it at least looked like its shields had been taken down.

"Fire on that enemy Cruiser. Its shields are down this is our chance."

"Sir I'm detecting build-up of energy that far exceeds anything that

of a Turian Dreadnought can put out from the larger vessel'' said the sensors operator. ''I believe they are planning to fire.''

''Get our shields at full strength and ready the Guardian lasers to shoot it down,'' said Actuss.

As the crew on the bridge worked to get everything ready the \_Midnight Shadow\_ blew up in a gulf of fire. The entire crew looked out in shock as to what happened. Actuss ran towards the weapons officer. 'What just happened,' He asked.

''I believe it was a Mass Accelerator that puts any of our Dreadnoughts to shame,'' said the weapons officer. "That must have been what destroyed the \_Spartus\_."

Actuss wasn't happy about this, he had lost two Cruisers, but he still believed he could win the fight. ''Have the Frigates continue concentrating all their fire on those three ships while we take \_The Hammer\_ and move back to get away from the range of that weapon," said Actuss.

As \_The Hammer\_ moved out of weapons range, the six Frigates split into groups of three, two for each enemy ship.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>UNSC Spirit of Fire<strong>

\*\*Main Bridge\*\*

Admiral (or Captain as he still liked to be called) James Cutter was sitting in his chair; he watched the battle outside the window. Serena the \_Spirit of Fire's\_ \_AI\_ was in her holographic form beside the holo-projector.

Cutter observed the hostile alien ships as six of them swarmed the \_Anubis\_, \_Hydra\_, and \_Thor\_. He could see the \_Hydra\_ needed help and the remains of the alien Cruiser \_Midnight Shadow\_, he noticed the alien Cruiser \_Hammer\_ creating distance between itself and the \_Dauntless\_.

"Serina, tell all ships fire at will and fire the Mac gun. Open a line to Captain Rogers," he ordered.

"Aye, Aye sir, preparing to fire Mac round" said Serina.

Cutter watched as the fleet engaged the enemy.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Turian cruiser<strong> \_The Hammer\_

\*\*CIC\*\*

"Sir, I am detecting eight additional contacts," shouted the sensors operator.

"What?" before Actuss could say another thing, a Turian pointed out the window.

"Sir look."

Every Turian was shocked as out of nowhere had appeared five other Frigates, two Cruisers similar but bigger to the one they were already fighting. But what held their attention was the \_Spirit of Fire\_.

"Spirits," said the weapons officer, "that thing is bigger than the \_Destiny Ascension\_."

The new contacts opened fire on the Turian Frigates; the Mass Accelerator from the large ship ripped through one and destroyed another. Actuss was not happy but like all military strategists he knew when to retreat.

"Order all ships to retreat back through the Relay."

The four remaining Frigates broke off their attack but before they started heading towards the Relay one was destroyed by a Marathon Cruiser, the other three continued their course.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>UNSC Spirit of fire<strong>

**\*\*Bridge\*\***

Captain Cutter was talking to Rogers as the Turian ships started to retreat.

"Looks like the enemy is retreating," said Cutter. "Everyone stand down, the \_Spirit of Fire\_ and the \_Dauntless\_ will take it from here," immediately all ships stopped firing.

"I take it you're thinking what I'm thinking Admiral," said Rogers.

"I do indeed and it's Captain to you, Serina fire Ion-Cannons."

"Scott fire Ion-Cannons," said Rogers over the comms copying Cutters idea.

After the Mon-Calamari joined the OSA, they shared this new piece of technology that allowed starships and fighters to EMP other vessels leaving them dead in space with just live support remaining. Scientists were successful in getting both components of a Mac gun and Ion-cannon to work together without waiting time for one after the other was fired, both could be fired simultaneously if needed.

The blue ionized particles traveled through space like some electrode spirit. The blast from the \_Dauntless\_ failed to hit its target but the \_Spirit of Fire's\_ was successful; hitting the last of the vessels before they entered the relay. As the Ion blast hit the Frigate it caused the Turian vessel to light up with a shimmering blue array of sparks.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>UNSC Halcyon MK.2-class light cruiser<strong>\_  
Dauntless\_

**\*\*Main Bridge\*\***

"Captain, do you want us to finish them off," asked the weapons officer.

Alex looked at him and said, "No we need answers on who they are and why they attacked us."

"Captain Rogers, come over to the \_Spirit of Fire\_, I have a team ready to board the vessel" said Captain Cutter over the comms.

"Ok, get a Pelican ready for transport to the Spirit."

\* \* \*

><p><strong>UNSC Spirit of Fire<strong>

**\*\*Armory\*\***

Sergeant Major John Forge was busy getting himself and a team of twenty ODST's ready to board the enemy ship. Opposite them the three famous Spartans of Red Team, Jerome-092, Douglas-042 and Alice-130 also readying themselves. If you were looking at Forge you would almost think he was happy. The truth was Forge was a little happy. While he was angry about the lives lost in the attacks today, he was happy that this would give him an excuse to stay in the military.

Ever since he enlisted at the age of 16, the Marine Corps had been Forge's life. He was a born warrior, even though his repeated acts of insubordination assured that he would never rise above his rank ( the only reason he had risen to Sergeant Major was for his acts of valor throughout the years since the Human Covenant War ). He had served in every war, from the Human-Covenant War to the Mandalorian War. He also served in the Outer Rim purges. His whole life had been the Corps. Some of the shit he had done would have killed anyone else but a Spartan, but everyone said "Forge is too stubborn to die." After the Human-Covenant War ended he married Professor Ellen Anders, the head scientist on the \_Spirit of\_\_ Fire. \_After so much fighting over the years she had almost convinced him to retire from military service. But after this double alien attack, he had the perfect excuse to stay.

The door to the armory opened and Captain Cutter and Rogers walked in. Rogers was momentarily surprised when he noticed the Spartans, but then he shrugged it off and laughed a little.

"Red Team, why am I not surprised your hear."

"Hey, unless the brass says otherwise, the \_Spirit of\_\_ Fire \_is where we stay sir," said Douglas.

"Right, everyone listen up," ordered Cutter. Immediately the ODST's, Spartans and Forge quieted down and came close.

"Sergeant Forge we will be transporting your team via the teleportation grid to right outside what Serina believes is the

bridge. Once we have conformation that all contacts are targeting you, Red Team will be sent over to take them out from behind. You have all had some training in the ways of the force so you will be able to confirm who the commanding officer on that alien ship and bring him/her back alive. Is that clear?"

Every one gave him a "Sir, yes Sir". As they exited the armory, Rogers stopped Forge.

"Sergeant, once all contacts are down, place Scott in the ships computers, he'll then upload information to the Spirits computers," said Rogers and he handed the chip storing Scott to Forge.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Turian Frigate<strong>

\*\*CIC\*\*

Captain Striker was giving out orders to prepare for the Alien race's boarding parties. He could see on the projector the enemy vessels closing in on his Frigate.

"Get teams to cover the airlocks!" He ordered his men.

As two Turian soldiers were about to exit the CIC, there was a strong flash of bright light in the hallway. As it dissipated the Turians were surprised to see twenty strange looking creatures in the hallway. The aliens got into cover as one that did not wear a helmet started speaking in a strange language. The appearance of the helmetless one reminded them of the Asari.

"Everyone surround the door don't let them get through," ordered Striker as he grabbed his pistol and ducked behind the desk in front of the door. All the Turians in the CIC were so focused on the new aliens that they didn't notice the flash that came from behind them. Two Turians furthest from the door felt something rub against them, followed by a sudden black out. Six other Turians furthest from the door suddenly collapsed as well.

Striker looked around at his men, he was losing them fast. A Turian covering behind the door stepped out and was immediately shot by the aliens. Another opposite him took a shot to the head; he only had seven men left.

Then the aliens stopped firing. Wondering what was going on Striker was about to have a look when he heard something like a socket blown out. As he turned to see where the noise had come from, he came face to face with the Gold visor of a large green, machine looking being.

The Juggernaut immediately grabbed his hand and tied his wrists. Two Turians were grabbed by beings similar to the one that had him. Before the five other Turians could open fire they were shot by Forge and the ODST's, who then entered the CIC.

"Good job people," Forge said. The ODST's started going around the unconscious Turians putting restraints on them. The conscious Turians were herded near to the door. Forge moved to the still active console.

As the Spartans and ODS'T's exited the CIC to secure the rest of the crew, Forge took the chip containing Scott from his pocket and placed it next to the console. His avatar then appeared and jumped of the chip into the console.

"\_Spirit of Fire\_ this is Forge, we have captured the ship and are sending the ODS'T's and Spartans to round the rest of the crew, Scott is in their mainframe information should be over shortly."

"Very good Sergeant Major, we will be docking with the Frigate shortly" said Cutter.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>UNSC Spirit of Fire<strong>

\*\*Bridge\*\*

As Serina examined the information Scott was feeding her, Captain Cutter and Captain Rogers were both having a cup of nice hot coffee. Cutter sat in his Captain's chair while Rogers sat beside a console across from him. To Cutter, Rogers looked slightly depressed. After taking a sip from his cup he spoke to Rogers.

"You calmed down yet."

"Yeah kind of," he replied.

"Don't blame yourself, from what I heard the first group open fired almost without warning, didn't even respond to the first contact package, and the second group attacked as soon as they exited the device," said Cutter trying to make him feel better.

Alex knew Cutter was right, though there had always been trouble with pirates and slavers that dared to try and exist outside of Hutt Space attacking remote small colonies, they were usually put down very quickly. Not since the Mandalorian War and the Outer Rim Purges had innocent civilians lost their lives in a battle. The fact that it had been on his watch made it difficult on him.

As she continued to sieve through the information, Serina found something surprising.

"Admiral, Captain," She said to them both, "you need to see this." As she said that the information Scott was feeding her stopped and Scott transited from the alien Frigate to the \_Spirit of Fire\_, his holographic form appearing not far from Serina.

Serina set up a link between her and Rogers's and Cutter's Neural implants. They began looking at the information which had been translated into English thanks to the translation program. They were rather shocked by what they were reading.

"Another alien alliance," said Cutter.

'I have to tell you when we started this fight I thought we were dealing with at least two hostile races, I didn't expect this,' Said Rogers. Just then Sergeant Forge entered the bridge and handed Scott's chip back to Rogers. Alex walked up to Scott's avatar; he

placed his hand on the chip and disappeared.

"I'll head back to the \_Dauntless\_ and make my report" said Rogers to Cutter.

"We'll tow the Frigate back to Shanxi and drop the prisoners off with General Williams. Serina get this Intel to him and the Senate, they'll all want to see it," Said Cutter.

As both men parted ways they both wondered what the future might hold.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>AN: This chapter is finally done. I'm sorry this took longer than I thought it would. But now first contact with Citadel space has occurred. What will the future hold. Stay tuned to find out.\*\*

\*\*The next chapter will feature a few new characters in the OSA and a background story on them.\*\*

\*\*Both the Batarians and the Turians mistook the Paris-class heavy frigates as Cruisers. That's because they have a length of 535 meters. In Council Space they would be considered small Cruisers.\*\*

\*\*\*\*I've also created a poll regarding the gender of Noble 6. This poll will be open until my next chapter is posted.\*\*\*\*

\*\*I will try and update again either during the weekend or sometime next week.\*\*

## 5. Chapter 5: Talks and Preperations

\*\*May 19, 2650\*\*

\*\*Core Worlds\*\*

\*\*Coruscant system\*\*

\*\*High Charity\*\*

\*\*Military Council Chambers\*\*

High Charity, the holy city of the San 'Shyuum and once the capital of the Covenant Empire. The mushroom like planetoid station stood at 464 Kilometers in length and 348 Kilometers (216.2 miles) in width. It was currently floating in orbit around the artificial world of Coruscant. The station was powered by a Forerunner Key Ship, or Dreadnought. The station served as the second biggest center of cultural and economical center in the OSA, the biggest being Coruscant. There are also shops, restaurants and recreational facilities, serving the wealthy residents who lived and worked throughout the station.

It was once the capital of the OSA, but now served as the headquarters of the OSA High Military Council (HMC), made up of the highest ranking officers from almost every species in the OSA. The MC



was currently in session in the war chambers. It was here in these very same chambers that the Prophets of Truth, Mercy and Regret declared their genocide war on humanity one-hundred and twenty-five years ago, the military leaders of the OSA discussed military actions and operations throughout OSA space.

The current session should have been one of celebration. The fleet that had been sent to aid the Autobots in retaking Cybertron had a few hours ago returned successful. Instead the chambers were filled with an atmosphere of anger and hatred thanks to the news sent by Captain Rogers and Admiral Cutter. Most of the races tried to keep their anger hidden, trying to be professional. But that did not stop some of Sangheili, Jiralhanae, Twi'leks, Mandalorians, Wookiees, Keelish, Lycans, and Zabrak present. Those that sat beside them could practically feel the rage coming from them.

All the leaders of all the OSA's military's filled the room. Figures such as Arbiter Thel Vadam, Jedi Master Rada Vadam, Jiralhanae Chieftain Martin, Master Chief John-117 leader of all Spartans, Lord of Admirals Terrance Hood, Admiral Gial Ackbar, Canderous Ordo also known as Mandalore the Preserver, and the Director of ONI Catherine Elizabeth Halsey to name a few.

When they had heard about the double attack at Shanxi Device, now known as a Mass Relay, everyone was shocked. After it was reported that both attacks ended in victory for the UNSC they all had breathed better. Captain Rogers had requested "feelers" to be sent to Shanxi to study the recovered alien bodies from the first attack, and to glean information from the captured aliens from the second attack. The HMC had approved. The feelers had sent their report and findings back an hour ago.

'Feelers' are people who have underwent the bioengineering procedure to acquire the Protheans skill of transmitting and receiving data just from touching people or objects. This procedure, though, was incredibly expensive to perform. As such, there were only a few people who had this skill and were highly valued for it. Some Jedi were able to do this however through use of the force. Anyway, the point was that a team of these 'Feelers' had managed to extract the wanted information from the aliens bodies, who were just discovered to call themselves 'Batarians' and 'Turians', and it was anything but good.

\_"Are you sure this information correct," asked Halsey.\_

\_"Yes Director Halsey, the four eyed\_ \_aliens known as the 'Batarians' are slavers. The ones we fought were hired by their government the Batarian Hegemony to activate the Mass Relay and scout out the Shanxi system for new \_\_resources for the Hegemony, and if they found a new race to enslave it,"\_ replied Jedi Master Quinlan Vos.

Quinlan Vos was a human Jedi Master who was renowned for being the best 'feeler' in the OSA, his natural force abilities only further enhanced his psychometric powers. He was also known for his hunting, tracking, infiltration, assassination, and espionage and counter-intelligence skills. He was the head of the team that was sent to Shanxi to study the alien bodies and glean information.

"How do these Turians fit into the picture," asked Thel

Vadam.

\_"They were sent to stop the Batarians from activating the Relay, which seems to be against citadel law. They engaged the Batarians with both sides taking damage. When the science teams activated the Relay in the Shanxi system the Relay on their side was activated as well. After splitting up their fleet to delay the Turians the ship's Captain Rogers's first encountered belonging to the Batarains entered the Relay."\_

\_"Captain Rogers report said that he delivered the first contact package but the Batarians didn't respond. Can you tell us why?" Lord Hood asked.\_

\_"Yes sir, when the Batarian Commander in charge of the fleet saw the package he believed we were a peaceful maybe pacifist people. His thoughts exactly were "These aliens were peaceful, which meant that they would be much easier to enslave as you could install fear and manners into civilized beings much easier then into wild beasts". It goes without saying that had they met any other OSA race they would have tried the same thing."\_

This lead to increased growling and muttering from the Sangheili, Jiralhanae, Twi'leks, Mandalorians, Wookiee's, Keelish, Lycans, and Zabrak present.

Halsey knew tempers were going to boil over soon. But still she continued. \_"Why did the Turians attack?"\_

\_"Well the Captain of the Frigate we captured wasn't very forthcoming. But that wasn't any problem. With what I read off him and the information from the Codex activation of a dormant Mass Relay is forbidden by citadel law every since the citadel's encounter with the Rachni, which led to the Rachni Wars. The Turian Captain learned we had opened the Relay after the Batarians had already gone through. His plan was to subdue us for breaking council law and gain the Hierarchy, the Turians government a new client race." \_

The professional atmosphere that barley contained the anger being felt in the chambers was finally broken by Rada, he was wearing armor similar to his father, what he had read about the Turians and Batarians in the Codex and everything he had heard from Master Vos made him lose it. Filled with extreme rage, he violently through the data pad that had been given to him. The pad flew over the heads of several of the senators, several having to duck; it came to a stop as it shattered like glass against the wall.

"Honourless, murdering cowards!" he roared so loud that Martin, Thel and John swore they could see his veins on his neck.

"Rada, please calm down," asked his father, not wanting everyone to voice their anger, though he himself could understand his son's actions and felt the same way.

Both John and Thel placed their hands on Rada's shoulders, helping him to calm. His breathing was heavy as he spoke. His eyes closed.

"Forgive me please?"

"There is nothing to forgive Rada," said Lord Hood, everyone knew that Rada had a temper, and he usually kept it in check very well. But sometimes, like with his actions on Pandora against the RDA, the effort became too much. Plus, they all felt the same way as him.

The military councilor for the Wookiees General Tarfful stood up as voiced his thoughts.

(\_Speaking Wookiee, translating): \_"But Rada is correct. Everyone knows of the Wookiees famous temper when we become enraged. It has been a part of my people since the time of our ancestors. Yet even then, we still keep to a code of honor, which includes never kill the innocent or those who can't protect themselves. This codex describes Turians as honorable; they don't know the meaning of the word". He then gave a big roar. "There, is, NO, honor in what they have done," he started off slowly, "THEY KILLED DEFENSELESS CIVILIANS INSTEAD OF FACING A REAL THREAT," Shouting out the last part. His guards roared in approval.

Fleet Admiral Thomas Lasky stood up to speak. "The Turians actions were uncalled for," he said trying his best not to sound like he was OK with what he was about to say, "but they were merely following their laws by trying to stop us from activating any other Relays." The mention of the law infuriated most.

"A law we had no way of knowing," shouted Fleet Master Rtas 'Vadum. "What right do they have to kill civilians, to open fire on those that they have never met for breaking their laws and don't know it?" He said all this while staring daggers at Lasky.

Admiral Gial Ackbar, grand leader of the Mon-Calamari armada, then spoke.

"I agree with all of you. But this meeting was called so we may decide on a course of action, not to argue among ourselves. What has arguing and squabbling ever accomplished? If I may, I would like to borrow a quote from Abraham Lincoln, who you all know was the 16th President of the United States on Earth long before the UNSC: "A house divided against itself cannot stand." We have survived all these years together by showing unity and brotherhood. Let us continue to show that today and allow our minds to settle so that they may become clear."

This seemed to calm everyone down and allowed them to clear their heads. A few even looked ashamed of themselves.

"Thank you Admiral Ackbar," said Captain Miranda Johnson nee Keyes. "You speak with the wisdom of a fine leader. In anger we often forget our duty and responsibilities, which we must never do. Our goal here today is to discuss a plan of action."

"What is there to discuss? A strike force must be prepared to strike at not only the Turians but these Batarians as well. Their actions must not go unpunished!"

Everyone looked at the person that the voice belonged to. He was one of the most ruthless and famous military figures in the entire OSA, General Grievous.

"General, what are you proposing?" Miranda asked.

"A double counter strike. Neither of these attacks on Shanxi can go unpunished. I suggest that a strike force be sent to attack the Turians before they can organize a bigger offensive against us. Meanwhile, Jedi Master Vos's report said that he managed to get the location of the base the Batarians used to supply their fleet. If I may have a strike-force put under my command, I can launch a quick and deadly offensive against it. Clean and swift. Plus we would gain a staging point for future operations in enemy territory." Both of these arrogant bantha races seek to enslave us in some way. My people have lived through that already. I tell you now, no power or person exists that makes a slave out of me or my people again!"

This earned a roar and applause of approval from the old Covenant races as well as from the Twi'leks, Mandalorians, Wookiee's, Keelish, Lycans, and Zabrak present. All of whom said something similar.

Lord Hood banged quieted the chambers and then spoke.

"Your plan proposes an acceptable course of action general, with some adjustments. Master Vos can you tell us anything that might prove useful in planning a counter attack?"

\_Yes sir, we have acquired the location of a Turian planet that should serve as an excellent choice for a counter-attack against the Turians. It is called **\*\*Gothis\*\***. It serves as were the Turians test and trains their new recruits, as well as test new weapons tech. Basically it is our equivalent to Reach." And as the good general stated we have the location of the base the Batarians used to supply their fleet. They call the planet Torfan. I should warn you that the Batarians use the planet to hold slaves and deal with other mercenary and pirate groups. Expect moderate to heavy resistance.\_ \_We know from the codex that their laws state that a meeting with a new alien race is too brought before to their Citadel Council. If they follow their laws the council should send a diplomatic envoy to Shanxi. But if they keep our meeting a secret, they will send a large force to conquer Shanxi sense they detected it on their scanners and believe that it's our one planet. They also don't know that their facing an alliance."\_

Lucian, the leader of the Lycan Clans, spoke for the first time. "Good we can maintain the feint and then take them by surprise."

Lord Hood looked at everyone then spoke about the plan he had concocted. "Whether they send a diplomatic envoy or an invasion it's crucial that we send troops and ships to reinforce Shanxi, just in case. We must maintain the illusion that the Turians will be facing only one race. An allied fleet can be waiting outside the system to reinforce Shanxi and finish off the enemy if need be. If the Turians attack Shanxi they will be destroyed. Then a counter-attack can be planned on Gothis. In the meantime, I will give General Grievous the go ahead to pick a strike force to attack the Slaver/Pirate base at Torfan and level it to the ground."

Selene, the leader of the Vampire Coven, asked, "Lord Hood, who will lead the fleet at Shanxi?"

Lasky rose from his seat so fast he was almost a blur. "Infinity and Battlegroup Dakota volunteer Lord of Admirals sir!"

Lord Hood looked at the room and asked, "All in favor?"

Everyone raised their hands.

"It's settled then. Admiral Lasky will take the \_Infinity\_ and her Battlegroup to reinforce Captain Cutter and Rogers in Shanxi's space defense. All their marines, ODS'T's, armor support, and Spartan compliments will be placed on Shanxi to reinforce General William's in the ground defense. I am also authorizing the dispatch of Battlegroup Tsunami."

This got an understandable shock from most of the chambers occupants. Battlegroup Tsunami was part of the UNSC 23rd Heavy Fleet. It was made up of only twenty-five vessels, but it was a fleet designed with one purpose; destroy the enemy with overwhelming power, like a Tsunami. Consisting of two Carriers, ten of the new Golem\_-class Assault Destroyers, \_seven of the new \_Orin-class Battlecruisers, \_five of the new \_Phoenix-class Battleships, \_and at the head of the battlegroup a \_Thermopylae-class Super Carrier. \_Some would call this overkill. But when it came to an impending alien invasion there was no such thing as overkill.

"General Grievous you are free to choose your fleet, anyone who volunteers to go with you may."

"Thank you Lord Hood, I promise you will not be disappointed," said Grievous.

Hood then turned back to the projector. "Master Vos please connect us with General Williams. We need to talk about troop deployments and strategy."

\* \* \*

><p><strong>May 21, 26502157\*\*

\*\*Apien Crest\*\*

\*\*Trebia System\*\*

\*\*Palaven\*\*

\*\*Hierarchy Fleet High Command\*\*

On the Turian homeworld, Tonn Actuss was waiting for the military leadership of the Hierarchy to give their verdict on his battle with the Batarian pirates and the incident at Relay 314 following afterwards. For the past three hours they had been reading his reports over his battle with the pirates that destroyed half of his patrol fleet; and the skirmish with the unidentified race that destroyed most of the other half. He was hoping the Hierarchy would allow him another chance to finishing what he started, with an entire armada of ships at his command he was sure he could win. He knew that was unlikely however, at best he'd probably get demoted, to ether sever or Captain a Frigate. He didn't even want to think about the worst case.

The military leaders of the Hierarchy had three high ranking officials who were just finishing reading the reports Actuss had

wrote for them. Admiral Mehrkuri was the first to start the conversation.

'Obviously Captain Actuss did the right thing upholding council law, by stopping this race from activating anymore Mass Relays.'

'We don't deny his actions were justified, but he had already lost half of his fleet and could have thought out his plan better," said admiral Krek. 'None the less we should be more concern about this new race; they have a mass accelerator more powerful than our own," his voice filled with some concern.

"Yes from the reports it appears that their accelerator can destroy one of our Cruisers with a single shot, though that is questionable since no one saw what happened to the \_Spartus\_ but with what is mentioned about the \_Midnight Shadow\_ it's more than likely what happened to \_Spartus\_," said admiral Lo.

"They must be an aggressive species, no race that's about to leave their home system would have weapons like that, so it's more than likely Actuss did the right thing by opening fire, they probably would have attacked anyway," said Admiral Mehrkuri.

"What I'm finding most interesting is their ships do not appear to use much Element Zero. Our ships sensors barley detected any on the enemy ships.'

'How is that possible?' said admiral Lo. 'Element Zero is the bases for all technology in Citadel and Terminus space, even the Geth use eezo.'

"We must strike back and subdue this race and acquire their weapons and technology, if we can get our hands on it we can increase our power and authority in both Citadel and Terminus space, maybe even acquire a new client race in it," said admiral Mehrkuri.

"Yes if we can subdue them now, before the Council discovers what has happened, they will have to accept what we and whatever story we got this new species to say, as the truth," Said Lo.

"And once we obtain their technology the Hierarchy would be truly unstoppable. Who should lead the fleet back through relay 314?" asked Krek. All three of them took a moment to think about it. They all eventually rested on one person, Admiral Lo spoke first.

"General Desolas Arterius."Mehrkuri and Krek didn't even have to say anything, their faces said it all, they were in agreement.

"We must be careful about how we organize for the attack less the STG notices. We must be very subtle about where we draw our forces from," said Admiral Krek.

Everyone agreed with his thinking. They couldn't send to big a force all at once to Relay 314, or as big a force as they normally might or the Salarians would notice. It was decided that the \_11th Expeditionary Fleet\_ would be sent to Relay 314, while the \_12th Expeditionary Fleet\_ would move from patrol duty and stealthy join them at the Relay. Other forces would be discretely added from across the Hierarchy.

"Right have Tonn Actuss come in," shouted Mehrkuri.

Tonn Actuss walked into the meeting room; the admirals were sitting across from each other about to give him his final judgment.

'Captain Tonn Actuss you were brought before us over your battle with the pirates at Relay 314 and the following incident. We find you not guilty over both incidents. However, due to several questionable decisions on your part during the incident with the new race, some punishment is in order. You will not lead the assault back through the Relay, instead you will be demoted to captaining a Frigate and placed under the command of General Desolas Arterius who will lead the assault back through Relay 314, and attack the planet you believe to be the enemies home world.'

Tonn Actuss was happy and surprised. Not only would he be given another chance, but he will be under command of one of Palaven's greatest generals, Desloas Arterius. 'I will not fail the Hierarchy again,' said Actuss. He saluted the Admirals and walked out of the meeting.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>May 21, 26502157\*\*

\*\*Shanxi system\*\*

\*\*Shanxi\*\*

\*\*Shanxi Defense Force HQ\*\*

General Williams had just gotten off the QEC with the OSA High Military Council. He couldn't help but smile a little. Admiral Lasky was bringing Infinity and Battlegroups Dakota and Tsunami to reinforce Shanxi. Other races such as the Wookiees and Lycans would be sending some ground troops as well. He would also be getting some \*\*Katarn-class Commandos \*\*from the Clone-Joint Species Army.

He entered the main control room to find Master Quinlan Vos waiting for him. The Jedi had a certain Jamaican look and the aura of a Hippie. But he did look good in his battle armor, which all Jedi wore.

"So how'd it go," asked Vos.

"We're going to be getting a lot of support. Admiral Lasky and his battlegroup as well as Battlegroup Tsunami are heading here to reinforce us. Lucian is sending the Alpha Dogs and General Tarfful is sending us four platoons as well," replied General Williams.

Quinlan raised his eyebrows. "That is a lot of help. But I was under the impression that we were trying to maintain the illusion that their only facing one race. If they manage to land troops they will contact their superiors."

"Don't worry. If they land troops on Shanxi our A.I's will jam all their communications going to and off the colony."

"And what is our plan of defense if they do, and will most likely, land troops," asked Master Vos.

"Our anti-air guns will open fire on their landing craft. All the heavy fire should force them to land in the woods. Once the enemy lands the Lycans will launch an ambush and surprise the Turians. When they scatter the Wookiees will launch a second ambush and pick them off," replied Williams.

Vos nodded. "It's a good plan. But what about the capitals defense? That will be their priority target."

Were evacuating as many civilians as we can. The rest will be sent to the bunkers when our long range sensor probes on the other side of the Relay detect anything coming. Defense lines and checkpoints are being set up. Anti-infantry and vehicle guns are being distributed. We'll make our final plans and solid up our defenses once our reinforcements arrive. I'm giving you command of some of my men when the battle starts."

Quinlan Vos could only nod. He knew this upcoming fight would be big. Hopefully they could hold out.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>May 23, 26502157\*\*

\*\*Undisclosed System\*\*

\*\*Turian Colony\*\*

\*\*Edessan\*\*

\*\*Orbit Turian Fleet\*\*

Orbiting the Turian colony world of Edessan , a fleet of different size and class ships was assembling and preparing to launch an attack on the home planet of the hostile race beyond Relay 314, to subdue them and obtain their technology to strengthen the Hierarchy's military. A Turian was looking out a window of a space station at the assembled fleet, that he would soon command, but until then he had to prepare the fleet and assemble the best soldiers for the ground assault.

'General Arterius how goes the preparation for our attack on this new race," asked Commander Vyrnnus.

Desolas looked at Vyrnnus as he stood next to him then looked at the fleet. "'We are on schedule. I'm just finishing the roster and about to go over Captain Actuss's information about the enemy's strength.'" said Desolas. He was surprised by the enemy's weapons and ships shields; a mass accelerator that puts out more power and destructive force than their own weapons, and also their ships have very little element zero at all with shields that can block guardian lasers, and guardian lasers that can shot farther than the Salarians ships. He can see why the Hierarchy wanted their weapons and any other technology they have.

"You may go Vyrnnus," said Desolas.

"Yes general," replied Vyrnnus. As he walked away to make preparations, Saren, Desolas's brother, walked past him and went to stand beside him; Saren Arterius was a growing Turian famous in the



military and would soon become the youngest Spectre ever in Council space.

'Saren come to see me off to win a huge victory for the Hierarchy," asked Desolas as he turned to face Saren.

'I wish I was going with you, but I'm needed elsewhere," replied Saren. 'But I know you will come back a hero for all Turians, I have something here to toast your victory." Saren brought up an expensive bottle of Turian brandy.

Desolas took the bottle and looked at it, it was his favorite kind. 'Save this for me when I return we will drink it together on Palaven. "He handed the bottle back to Saren and the two look out in space looking forward to that moment.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>May 23, 26502157\*\*

**\*\*Core Worlds\*\***

**\*\*Coruscant \*\***

**\*\*Council/Senate Building\*\***

Coruscant, the capital of the OSA and the center of the galactic community in the Orion arm of the galaxy! The entire planet was one big city and was the most politically important planet in the galaxy. It had a population of 1 trillion and served as the biggest economic and cultural marvel of the OSA. Few planets could match its economic might. Members of every race in the OSA lived in Galactic City. It was also home to the Jedi High Temple (headquarters of the Jedi High Council who lead the Jedi Order).

The Senate/Council building, also known as the **\*\*Senate Rotunda\*\***, **\*\*Senate Tower\*\***, **\*\*Convocation Center\*\***, or **\*\*Senate Dome\*\***, located in the Senate District, served as the seat of the galactic government in the Orion Arm. In the **\*\*Grand Convocation Chamber \*\***(the largest room in the building), also referred to as the **\*\*Senate Rotunda\*\***, **\*\*Senate Arena\*\***, **\*\*Senate Chamber\*\***, **\*\*Great Rotunda\*\***, sat the Galactic Senate and Galactic Council. Their primary duties were to mediate any disputes between star systems, worlds and cultures, to regulate trade between systems, to protect and care for citizens in need and to provide mutual defense in face of threats to the OSA.

The Senate was made up of Senators and Representatives from every race and colony in the OSA. One Senator and one Representative were chosen by their sector/colony to represent them in the Senate. The Council was made up of one member of each race in the OSA (currently 40). The council led the Senate and held ultimate power in any decision. Together these two political bodies held more power than any other body in the OSA.

It had been three day's since the High Military Council session at High Charity. This session was being held in the Senate to discuss what the OSA's next action would be should the Turians or Citadel Council attack again. The HMC was also attending, some though appearing by hologram. Those in attendance that were not present in

the last session included General Xavier, son of Lucian the Alpha of all Lycans, Sonja, Lucian's wife and Xavier's mother, and leader of the Vampire Coven, Sarah Lyons, the leader of the "\*\*\*Lyons Pride\*\*", the most elite unit in the Brotherhood of Steel on Far Isle and leader of the Autobots Optimus Prime who appeared via hologram because of his size.

At first the double attack on Captain Rogers's fleet in the Shanxi system had scared the Senate about a possible invasion. When the news came of the fleet's victory they all breathed easier. When they learned about the civilian fleet that was slaughtered most of the Senate was calling for blood. The codex that had been captured and delivered to the Senate hadn't helped.

\*\*\*"HOW DARE THEM!"\*\*

\*\*\*"WE MUST ACT NOW!"\*\*

\*\*\*"NO ONE WILL MAKE SLAVES OUT OF MY PEOPLE!" \*\*

\*\*\*"DEATH TO THE TURIAN!"\*\*

These were only some of the calls being shouted by hundreds of angry senators. All of them overlapping the other in an angry uproar.

"We must act now. Strike hard and fast before they can attack again," said \*\*Mee Deechi\*\*, the Umabaran senator of the Umabaran homeworld of Umbara.

"Violence only breeds more violence. It may yet be possible for a peaceful solution," said Onacanda Farr, the Rodian senator of the Rodian homeworld of Rodia.

(\_Speaking Wookiee, translating): \_"Democracy is fine when it is possible Onacanda. But these aliens have shown no sign of favoring diplomacy. Military action must be taken," said Yarua, the Wookiee senator of the Wookiee homeworld of Kashyyk.

Shouts like these ran throughout the chamber. Some supporting peace, others supporting war.

Finally the Jiralhanae Councilor, Agmar, had had enough. He let out a big roar that silenced the chamber and shouted "WE SHALL HAVE ORDER."

The Human Councilor Richard Kobe spoke up. "Senators of the OSA galactic congress. I ask that you stray from angry words and allow us to talk like civilized people. While I share your anger we must not allow it to rule us and make our decisions."

This seemed to pacify the senate.

"Now, the High Military Council has proposed a what I believe will be a successful counter-strike military campaign that we can all agree on. Does anyone else here wish to speak?"

"I do Councilor."

All heads turned to either look at their screens or directly at the speaker. The speaker was a beautiful woman, a woman who was well

known in the senate for her firm belief in democracy and her genuine care for not only her people, but all people of the OSA; she was compassionate, always considering other people before herself, and she stood firm in what she believed in, she was also a persuasive and extremely empathetic speaker. This woman was Senator Padmé Amidala Skywalker.

"The chair recognizes Senator Padmé Amidala Skywalker."

Padmé rose and addressed an improvised speech to the Senate.

"Honorable Senators and Councilors of the OSA. Today I have heard your cries for blood over the double attack at Shanxi. I share your feelings of contempt, but allowing ourselves to be ruled by contempt will accomplish nothing. After the Human-Covenant War Humanity had every right to hold contempt towards the Sangheili for what was done to us in the war. Yet despite holding every reason to hold on to that fire of hate that was felt by all humans for so long, Lord Hood added the Arbiter in the Sangheili Civil War. In return the Sangheili helped us destroy the Storm Covenant at Requiem. Through laying down our hatred we have formed closer bonds of friendship and brotherhood than anyone could have thought possible. We formed the OSA together. And all throughout our nations existence we have been tested by contempt due to conflict, the Kig'Yar pirate war, the Slavery War, the CIS, the Quarren/Mon Cala Civil War, and the Mandalorians. All of these events and people were responsible for some atrocious acts, and these acts could have lead us to use our full might to destroy those who sought harm to use and others."

"But we didn't, and we didn't because we are not warmongers. In every conflict in our history, from the World Wars of Earth to the Mandalorian Wars, no matter how bad the conflict or what acts our enemy took we have always looked for and have been open to a peaceful solution. We have always taken actions that would lead to peace and avoid fighting when possible. I believe that we don't have to fight."

<em>

"These new aliens are a part of something bigger, an alliance similar to us that we have only seen a small piece of. We cannot judge the many by the acts of the few. This codex we have read shows that there are those who would prefer to work with us and bring about peace instead of more conflict. But if we offer them only violence, they can only show us violence in return! Many will lose their lives. All will lose their freedom."

"I urge this Senate to remember that their duty is to preserve life and prevent war and seek peace at all times possible. For if we forget that, we are no better than those we are calling monsters. The road to peace is a long one, and it begins with you and your decision here today."

Padmé had always believed in democracy and doing what was right. She had also always been an inspiring speaker. Her speech had just earned her a round of applause from the entire senate. Even those who were moments ago hell bent on war.

The Councilors spoke among themselves before Remorse stood up from the Councilor podium and spoke. "Senator Padmé you are a credit to this entire legislative body. Too often do we allow our feelings to cloud our judgment and lead us to forget our duty. We need wise and

good honest people like you Senator to keep us in check."

The Iktotchi Councilor Ansuya spoke, "Perhaps the High Military Council's plan can be rectified? I purpose to go along with sending reinforcements to Shanxi. If a diplomatic fleet is sent by this Citadel Council or the Turians than we shall send a diplomatic envoy to greet them. If they attack then we will defend Shanxi. Should the planet fall or not we will counter attack. Councilor Mira (the Miraluka Councilor) and I have deemed and seen that this offers the most probable path of success."

Everyone in the OSA knew about the natural psychological Force abilities of the Miraluka and Iktotchi though they were not always taken seriously. But everyone agreed.

"We are all in favor. I deem this session over," said Sonja, who served as the Vampire Councilor.

The senators of the senate disembarked and left. PadmÃ© was approached by her two long friends and advisers Onaconda Farr and Bail Organa, who was the Senator and Viceroy of Alderaan.

"You did well today PadmÃ©. I am proud of you my sweet," said Onaconda.

"Thank you Uncle Ono," said PadmÃ©, calling him by the name she had given her close family friend.

"I have rarely heard such words of conviction. You should be proud," said Bail.

"I know I am." This was said by a new voice. Everyone turned to the newcomer who turned out to be a male human Jedi. PadmÃ© could only smile at the man. He was young and handsomely attractive, he was 1.88 meters tall, he had light brown hair, beautiful blue eyes, and a scar that ran just above his right eyebrow and down his right eye.

"It's nice when a women feels appreciated," said PadmÃ©.

"Good thing I know how to treat a lady," replied the man.

PadmÃ© couldn't contain herself anymore and she leaned up to kiss her husband, Anakin Skywalker.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>AN: Hello everyone. I'm sorry I wasn't able to upload this chapter last week I've been very busy with college. Anyway I've updated now and I hope you all like it. There will be a codex below to explain a few things. A codex will also be added next chapter to explain some of the new ships.<strong>

\*\*The poll results for Noble Six's gender are in and it was a tie. So I will be the deciding vote. I'm going to go for male. Tell me what you thought about PadmÃ©'s speech, did I get her character right.\*\*

\*\*The next chapter will be the Second Battle of Shanxi and the start of the First Contact War between the OSA and the Citadel Council. So you all soon.\*\*

\* \* \*

><p><strong><strong>CODEX ENTRY- <strong>ORION SYSTEMS ALLIANCE  
<strong>\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*OSA\*\*\*\*\*- \_The Orion Systems Alliance is an alliance made up of a collection of different sentient species that exist in the Orion arm of the galaxy. The OSA is the center of galactic government in the Orion arm, and any species that joins the OSA must follow the laws the OSA senate/council creates. There are a total of forty species in the OSA. At one time the OSA was once known as the \_Covenant\_.

\*\*GOVERNMENT- \*\*\_The OSA is under the control of a senate made up of senators and representatives from every colony in the OSA, including homeworlds. The senate is headed by a councilor made up of one member from each race in the OSA to represent them. They handle the day to day problems the embassies of the different races bring to them and are responsible for protecting said races. The senate/council also hold the power to declare war. A series of checks and balances exists between the senate and the council, which means that the senate can limit the power of the council and override their decisions and vice versa. There are other branches and committees in the OSA that deal with other problems that even the senate/council can't keep up with.\_

\_\*\*ECONOMY- \*\*\_The OSA's economy is not run by a single galactic bank or many banks. A universal money system is used by all in the OSA, but it doesn't run the economy alone. Rather, the senate/council ask for each colony to contribute resources to other colonies that need help and for building ships \_and weapons for their military. The OSA has a galactic market where the member species can buy or trade goods to each\_ other.\_\_

\_\_\*\*MILITARY AND\*\* \*\*INTELLIGENCE- \*\*\_The OSA military is the strongest military in the galaxy. It is run by the highest ranking admirals and supreme commanders in the Human and Sangheili, Jiralhanae, Mandalorian, Mon Calamari/Quarren, and Twi'lek governments. The OSA fleet is a combination of the member species who can build and operate ships, but any member from any race who wishes to serve on a ship belonging to a different race may. The OSA fleet is the largest and strongest in OSA space which can be called upon anywhere and still have reserves to protect High Charity and Coruscant. Patrol fleets big and small patrol sectors, trade lanes, regional territories, and the borders of the OSA with many emergency response fleets waiting and ready to go to should a patrol fleet or colony need help. \_\_\_\_\_The total combined fleet is under the command of now Lord of Admirals Terrance Hood.\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_\*\*ONI\*\* and \*\*The Union\*\* handle counter-espionage and spy operations as part of their information gathering duties, using resources provided by the OSA they are able to fund and set-up projects to test out new equipment and building stealth ships. ONI and The Union is composed of small units of Human, Sangheili or other species who are handpicked to be operatives who monitor developing situations or undertake covert missions.\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_\*\*SPEC-OPS\*\*- \_Special Operations Division or G.I JOE are \_the OSA Council's elite, made up from the best men and women from the top

military units in the OSA, invested with the Council's authority, they are vital to keeping the peace across OSA space. They are individuals who act either on the Council's orders or on their own initiative, to preserve galactic stability. Sometimes, in situations where the Council cannot be seen to act officially, they will send Spec-ops instead. Spec-ops have more freedom from the law than most groups, but still answer to their superiors and also to the OSA Council. All details of them are classified.\_\_\_\_\_

## 6. Chapter 6: The Second Battle of Shanxi

**\*\*AN:** I've completed this chapter. I hope you all like it. This chapter will have some reference to JediSpectre177's HaloMass Effect: Ruptured Universe Chapter 4. Battle of Shanxi, but it will ultimately be mine. **\*\***

**\*\*Once again my poll for Noble Six's gender has ended and it will be a male. I will be giving him the name Jarrod. If anyone has a better name please let me know and I might change the name.\*\***

**\*\*There will be a codex at the end of this chapter. Again I wish to thank JediSpectre177; this chapter is somewhat a template to JediSpectre177's fic HaloMass Effect: Ruptured Universe's chapter 4. \*\***

**\*\*I do not own Halo, Mass Effect, Star Wars, or any other franchise.\*\***

\* \* \*

><p><strong>May 27, 25602157\*\*

**\*\*Shanxi System\*\***

**\*\*Shanxi Orbit\*\***

**\*\*UNSC \_INFINITY\_\*\***

The \_UNSC Infinity \_was the first ship of its kind and upon its completion was called the culmination of human achievement. It finished construction in 2553, after the Human-Covenant War. The ship served as Fleet Admiral Thomas Lasky's flagship and was the first of a new line of \_Infinity-class heavy warships. \_

The ship was 5.6 kilometers (3.5 miles) from bow to stern, placing it as the largest vessel built by the UNSC. It was equipped with four Main Mac Cannons, 1,100 missile pods of three types: Archer, Rapier, and Howler, totaling the ship's missile payload at 25,900 missiles, and a twin energy projector. Close-in defense against enemy missiles, fighters, and boarding craft is provided by the ship's M965 Fortress point defense system, a network of 830 70mm automatic cannons and the ships Spartan Laser Cannons. It also has a number of Mark 2488 Magnetic Accelerator Cannons or Onagers.

The ship had gone through many changes since the creation of the OSA. Like all other UNSC ships since the joining of the Mon-Calamari the Mac guns had been upgraded to allow the firing of an Ion canon. While smaller warships like Frigates, Destroyers, and Cruisers were now equipped with a fusion of Titanium-A3/Durasteal armor plating, the

heavier ships such as the \_Infinity\_ were equipped with a fusion of Titanium-A3/Beskar armor plating. This made it extremely strong and heat, laser, and plasma resistant.

Another change was that all UNSC ships were now built for fighting in short range battles as well as long range. After the war with the Covenant, the brass saw that their ships focused too much on long range fighting. So funding was put into increasing the UNSC's knife fighting capabilities, and it paid off. All UNSC warships, including \_Infinity\_, were now equipped with Mk.2 Onager cannons on their port, starboard, dorsal and ventral sides. Covenant Pulse lasers were later added, as well as Turbolasers and Ion Cannon guns were added after the Mon-Calamari joined the OSA. All in all, the \_Infinity\_ was a powerhouse of a ship and you did not want to be on the receiving end of its guns.

One more noticeable upgrade was that the \_Infinity\_ was originally designed to carry ten \_Charon-class light frigates\_ as sub-vessels. Now it could carry ten \_Paris-class Heavy Frigates\_ as sub-vessels.

Fleet Admiral Thomas Lasky was currently standing in the bridge of his ship; he was one of the most popular military leaders in the OSA. He was a veteran of the Human-Covenant War, having been only a cadet at \*\*Corbulo Academy of Military Science \*\*or\*\* CAMS \*\*on \*\*Circinius IV\*\* when the war started. He was part of Hastati Squad, a freshmen cadet squad in the class of 2529 during the Insurrectionist War. Known for his renegade attitude as an "innie sympathizer," Thomas was shunned universally by squadmates and other classmates alike. Lasky was not hesitant whatsoever to express his views on the ongoing conflict with the Insurrectionists, even with the ardent stance on the conquering of the rebel effort by the majority of Corbulo Academy's staff and cadet corps. The constant display of pacifism and sympathy towards the Insurrectionist cause did not hamper his enthusiasm to successfully lead his team into combat using tactics that would overwhelm the enemy, albeit with tactics that would cause them to peacefully capitulate. Many believed that Thomas would not live up to the level of excellence set by his brother Cadmon, by then a marine junior officer in the ODSTs, nor the expectations of his estranged mother to at the very least, graduate from the academy. At the conclusion of his freshman year from 2525 to 2526, lingering doubts about his competency as a future officer were alleviated. When the Covenant attacked the academy, Lasky was able to lead the survivors of Hastati Squad to safety with the help of Spartan-117.

Throughout the war Lasky served in the navy admirably and rose to the rank of commander by its end. After the war he was placed as Captain Andrew Del Rio's XO aboard the \_Infinity\_. After Del Rio abandoned Master Chief on Requiem Del Rio was relieved of command and command was given to Lasky. Six months later he had obtained the rank of Captain and given command of the \_Infinity\_ and Battlegroup Dakota. The battlegroup consisted of 52 ships; the \_Infinity\_, 13 \_Halcyon MK.2-class light cruisers\_, 28 \_Paris-class Heavy Frigates\_, and 10 \_Charon-class light frigates\_. After the \_Charon-class light frigate\_ was discontinued from use and mothballed they were replaced in the battlegroup by 10 \_Gorgon-class Heavy Destroyers\_. Throughout the years he continued to serve admirably in the navy, from the Requiem campaign to the Mandalorian Wars, and had risen to the rank of Fleet Admiral.

Lasky also has a very high moral standard. When Admiral Osman ordered the execution of Dr. Halsey, he attempted to persuade Commander Palmer not to commit this action; showing his compassion for members of the UNSC as well as civilians whom he joined the UNSC to protect, not to kill.

Currently the admiral was going through battle strategy on his Data pad. \_Infinity\_ and Battlegroup Dakota had arrived in the Shanxi system three days ago, along with Battlegroup Tsunami. They had sent all their armor and troop support down to General Williams to posture Shanxi's defenses. Spartan-IV forces were also deployed from the two battlegroups down to Shanxi.

Additional support had come from the \_Forward Unto Dawn Mk.2\_, which had been rebuilt as an upgraded \_Paris-class Heavy Frigate\_, arriving in system transporting Lucian and his Lycan forces, as well as Wookiee Chieftain Tarfful and a platoon of Wookiee soldiers. Master Chief Supreme Commander John-117 had also arrived aboard the \_Dawn\_ with the Blue Team stating that he would be taking command of all Spartan Forces on Shanxi. A Clone Commando team had arrived to fight, while the Acclamator that had dropped them off returned to the fleet outside the system that would serve as reinforcements should Lasky need them.

The fleet around Shanxi stood as followed: \_Infinity\_ and Battlegroup Dakota combined with Battlegroup Tsunami made up seventy-five ships. Combined with Captain Alex Rogers's ships and Admiral Cutter's fleet plus the \_Dawn\_, the grand total came up to ninety ships of one \_Infinity-class warship\_, fourteen \_Halcyon MK.2-class light cruisers\_, thirty-seven \_Paris-class Heavy Frigates\_, ten \_Gorgon-class Heavy Destroyers\_, ten \_Golem-class Assault Destroyers\_, seven Orin-class Battlecruisers, five \_Phoenix-class Battleships\_, \_two\_ \_Marathon-class Heavy Cruisers\_, two UNSC Carriers, one Thermopylae-class Super Carrier, and the Spirit of Fire. \_They were also backed by fighter support and the four \*\*Orbital Defense Platforms \*\*orbiting Shanxi.

The plan was simple. Lasky would be in charge of the whole fleet in the upcoming battle. The next in command would be Admiral Cutter, followed by Captain Rogers and Captain Potter (head commander of Battlegroup Tsunami). Lasky would take half the fleet and hide behind the nearest gas giant "\*\*\*Ervin\*\*\*". He would take with him the \_Infinity\_, twenty \_Paris-class Heavy Frigates\_, the ten \_Golem-class Assault Destroyers\_, two \_Halcyon MK.2-class light cruisers\_, the seven \_Orin-class Battlecruisers\_, and the five \_Phoenix-class Battleships\_.

The other half of the fleet, under the command of Admiral Cutter, made up of twelve \_Halcyon MK.2-class light cruisers\_, ten \_Gorgon-class Heavy Destroyers\_, seventeen \_Paris-class Heavy Frigates\_; \_including the\_ Forward Unto Dawn, \_two\_ \_Marathon-class Heavy\_ \_Cruisers\_, \_two\_ UNSC Carriers, \_one\_ Thermopylae-class Super Carrier, \_and the\_ Spirit of Fire would stay in orbit over Shanxi to defend the colony and wait for the Turians or Citadel Council to show up. The idea was that Cutter would draw the Turians towards his fleet and close to Shanxi. Lasky would then come in and perform a flanking maneuver and cut a line straight through the Turian fleet and then surround it. If all went well the Turians would then be surrounded from the front and back, then both fleets would slowly close in and



finish them off. If any ground battle took place General Williams would be in charge of Shanxi's ground defense.

That was the plan anyway. Lasky just hoped that it wouldn't come to a fight.

"All ships are in position and your half of the fleet is ready to jump to Ervin on your command Admiral Lasky. General Williams has also contacted us and says that the all of Shanxi's defenses are as ready as he can make them", said the \_Infinity's\_ A.I Roland, whose avatar form was that of a World War 2 pilot.

"Thank you Roland", said Lasky. "All we can do now is wait and see what happens."

\* \* \*

><p><strong>May 27, 25602157\*\*

\*\*Exodus Cluster\*\*

\*\*Relay 314\*\*

\*\*Turian Fleet\*\*

Currently gathered was the 11th and 12th Expeditionary Fleet plus the 69th reserve battlegroup. These three fleets combined for a total of 120 turian ships consisting of 68 Frigates, 42 Cruisers, and 10 Dreadnoughts. They would be attacking the new enemy race's home world and had amassed at Relay 314.

General Desolas Arterius was currently sitting in the command chair on his personal dreadnought \_Wings of Glory\_; he was checking the final results of the Fleet. He was looking through his data pad at the information on the fleet; to him it appeared everything was in order. All ships had arrived on schedule. There was some delay due to the need to be stealthy when the Hierarchy was gathering the ships for this assault. But Desolas was sure that in the end it would be worth the effort.

'General, Captain Actuss is on the line for you sir," said the comm.'s officer.

Desolas walked up to the com and pressed a button, on the holoscreen Actuss popped up. 'Give me a status report," said Desolas.

'All ships are ready to proceed through the relay on your orders," replied Actuss.

'We've sent probes through the relay and there are no enemy ships on the other side,'" said Actuss. 'But the probes detect a large armada of ships over the planet we detected last time."

'Alright, begin to move out now; we will subdue this species and take their technology for the Hierarchy,'" said Desolas.

The entire fleet began passing through the relay, but they were unaware that a probe had been monitoring them and was sending signals through the relay to Shanxi.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Shanxi System<strong>

\*\*Shanxi Orbit\*\*

\*\*UNSC \_Infinity\_\*\*

\*\*Bridge\*\*

Lasky was just about to get off the comm. with Admiral Cutter when Roland appeared in the holotank.

'Admiral the probes from the other side of the relay and the one in the system have detected a fleet of 120 ship silhouettes matching that of Turian design, ETA six minutes,' said the AI.

"Did you catch that Cutter," asked Lasky.

"Yeah Serena has just informed me, 120 ships, we'd better get ready. I'll let you address the fleet," said Cutter.

"Alright Roland I'm going to open a neural line to all ships and planetary ground forces," said Lasky. He stood up and walked two steps forward then waited until Roland gave him the all clear.

\_(Making connectionâ€|connection acquired. Ready to receive message.)\_

\_This is Fleet Admiral Thomas Lasky to all ships and ground forces. The turians are back and they aren't here to make friends. They will be here in five minutes. You all know the plan and what to do. Should any turians attempt to flee back to the relay destroy them, but allow one to escape. Other than that just follow my and Admiral Cutters orders.' Good luck everyone, Gods speed."\_

\_(Connection Terminated.)\_

"Roland prep Infinity and her fleet escort for slipspace launch," said Lasky.

"Yes sir," said Roland giving a salute to the admiral.

In the orbit of Shanxi slipspace portals opened up taking Infinity and half the fleet to Ervin. Where they would wait for the right moment to engage the enemy.

Just as Admiral Lasky had left Captain (Admiral) Cutter gave out his orders.

"All ships into reverse chess formation. I want the Carriers and Super Carrier in the back with seven frigates, destroyers and the rest of the frigates in the middle, and all cruisers upfront with the Spirit of Fire. We will send a message to the turians asking them to stop and leave the system. If they do not comply we will open fire. After the first volleys are fired the \_Spirit of Fire\_ and the \_Zeus\_ (the UNSC Super Carrier) will switch positions. Once the enemy reaches close range brake formation and engage at will."

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Turian Dreadnought<strong>

**\*\*Wings Glory\*\***

**\*\*CIC\*\***

The turians had arrived 250,000 kilometers from Shanxi just a minute after the UNSC had gotten into formation. Desolas was standing in the CIC of his dreadnought looking at the replaced galaxy map at the enemy's forces; he was amazed how a race so new could build ships that big and amass them that soon. What really held his attention were the \_Spirit of Fire \_and the \_Zeus (the\_ \_Thermopylae-class Super Carrier)\_. Both ships were bigger than the \_Destiny Ascension \_and the \_Zeus \_was about twice the size of the\_ Spirit of Fire\_. "They will become an excellent client race," he said to himself. He then noticed the huge space stations or that's what he thought they were, before he could say anything his comm.'s officer reported to him.

'General the unidentified race has sent a message in our own language to us, should I allow it over the comm.," said the comm.'s officer as he looked to the general for compliance.

Desolas was momentarily shocked that the message was in turian. He then remembered from Actuss's report that a frigate had been captured. The aliens must have been able to crack the computers and decipher their language. "They will make an excellent client race indeed," he said to himself. He then looked at the comm.'s officer and gave his answer.

'No! They are probably demanding our surrender,' said Desolas. "Continue on and fire once we reach maximum weapons range."

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Spirit of Fire<strong>

**\*\*Bridge\*\***

After a minute it was obvious the Turians either didn't get the message or were just ignoring it. Cutter began giving out orders through his neural implant.

\_(Making connectionâ€¦|connection acquired. Ready to receive message.)\_

\_All ships the enemy has not responded to our hails. Pick your targets and fire once they reach maximum weapons range. Launch all fighters and activate your point defense systems to shoot down enemy fighters and missiles.\_

\_(Connection Terminated.)\_

The entire fleet readied all their Sabres, Longswords, and Broadswords for launch. The groundside Sabres were then launched into orbit and the silos housing the surface to space missiles were prepped. The Cruisers and the \_Spirit of Fire \_took aim at the turian fleet, while the ODP's took aim at the Turian dreadnoughts and

prepared to fire.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Turian Dreadnought<strong>

**\*\*Wings Glory\*\***

**\*\*CIC\*\***

Desolas's fleet had just reached 150,000 km from Shanxi when the sensors officer called out to him in alarm.

"Sir! Energy levels in the enemy fleet have skyrocketed. They are about to fire!"

"From this range? How can they get a positive lock and accurately hit a moving target, we still need to be at around 80,000 kilometers for optimal range." Desolas asked out loud.

"Enemy ships firing!"

A Turian frigate exploded on the holographic projector. Seven more frigates soon disappeared as well. Some of the rounds carried on after they destroyed their targets and destroyed two cruisers.

"WHAT JUST HAPPENED, Desolas shouted? No Mac gun can fire at this range."

"They obviously can sir, replied the sensors officer." We lost 8 Frigates and 2 Cruisers.

Desolas was cross but calm. He had underestimated this new race just like Actuss had. He couldn't afford to do that again.

"Accelerate all ships to full speed and focus kinetic barriers forward."

The fleet started to accommodate the general's orders. It all came to a halt when one of the UNSC's ODP's fired and tore right through the turian fleet destroying two cruisers and a dreadnought. The turians started to panic; they couldn't believe what was happening.

"NOW WHAT JUST HAPPENED," shouted Desolas.

"I think it was that space station, it fired a powerful tungsten round at incredible speeds," said the weapons officer. "It fired at an impossible speed the computers couldn't keep up," Desolas could hear fear from the Turian as he spoke.

"SIR, three more dreadnoughts have been destroyed by the other stations," said the sensors officer.

Desolas was now very mad. The enemy had destroyed 16 of his ships before they had even entered weapons range. Eight frigates, four cruisers, and four dreadnoughts gone.

"Don't panic, I want half of the remaining frigates to target those stations, cripple them if they can, launch all fighters to target the enemies and get the remaining frigates to overwhelm and collapse the

enemy's shields I'll take the cruisers and remaining dreadnoughts to finish the kill.''

\* \* \*

### ><p><strong>Space Battle<strong>

The battle had begun. The Turian fleet began moving themselves into position as Desolas had ordered. As they did the OSA fleet (made up of only UNSC ships) managed to fire another Mac barrage followed by Ion blasts. Most rounds hit their mark, fifteen Turian frigates were completely destroyed as the rounds hit them, and other frigates were spared as the slugs just narrowly missed them. Nine cruisers were utterly destroyed as the UNSC ships focuses their rounds on them with the \_Dauntless \_and the \_Spirit of Fire \_destroying one each in a single shot.

Other Mac round shots had been focused on the dreadnoughts, but the ships Mac guns weren't as powerful as the ODP's, so while their shields were strained or the ships themselves damaged none were taken down in a single shot. Except for the \_Zeus \_whose Mac round actually managed to destroy a dreadnought in a single shot.

Then the Ion barrage followed, the fleet fired randomly into the Turians not selecting a specific target. Most of the Ion blasts failed to hit a target but five frigates and seven cruisers scored a direct hit. Each ship came alive with pulses of electronic waves, knocking out most of their systems and leaving them adrift in space.

As both fleets drew closer to one another the fighters met head on. The UNSC fighter force pared 200 Sabres, over 300 Longswords, and over 250 Broadwords against the turians 300 interceptors. The Broadwords stayed close to the carriers and frigates while the Sabres and Longsword engaged the turians. The UNSC Sabres and Longswords held the advantage of their larger size, their changeable weaponry and their AI astro-droids. The turians were surprised as they met head-on that their enemies had shields. Quickly realizing that their current weapons setting was just bouncing off the turian fighters all Sabres and Longswords changed their weapons to plasma. The Turians lost 40 fighters as the plasma passed through their kinetic barriers. They regrouped and paired up against the UNSC fighters.

The UNSC and turian ships now met face to face, and the battle became a free for all. As soon as the Turian Fleet had reached 80,000 km, their maximum weapons range, they open fired. The turian frigates fired at the UNSC cruisers but did their rounds were harmlessly absorbed by the shields. The turian Cruisers and Dreadnoughts fared somewhat better destroying four frigates and a destroyer. Most of the frigates used their increased maneuverability to avoid most of the fire and the destroyer's shields and armor held up. The UNSC fleet returned fire with their Archer-missiles, destroying one cruiser and three frigates. Fighters continued to fight in and out of the large vessels with Sabres, Longswords, Broadwords, and turian interceptors being destroyed. The ODP's came online again and opened fire on the Turians, destroying a dreadnought, two cruisers and three frigates; two of the frigates being destroyed after the Mac tore through its original target.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Shanxi <strong>\*\*Orbit\*\*

\*\*Space Battle\*\*

\*\*Noble 5 and 6's Sabre\*\*

Jarrold-B312 also known as Noble Six was the pilot for the Sabre that he and Jorge-052 were in. Jorge sat behind him acting as the Radar Intercept Officer (RIO). An asrto-droid R3-B4 was in the astro-droid compartment that was situated behind the cockpit, providing extra radar and logistics help for both the Spartans as well as making repairs.

"Six you might want to lose these three," shouted Jorge regarding their situation. Jarrod was one of the best fighter pilots the OSA had at their disposal. He was one of the first that took part in the Sabre program in its early days; he was more than capable of handling their current problem. Three Turian Interceptors were chasing their tail around the space battle, in and out of Turian and UNSC ships. Jarrod put the Sabre into a barrel roll to avoid the fire from the fighters. R3 gave a large shriek as it happened while the metal slugs from the Turian Interceptors bounced off the Sabre's shields around him.

"Don't worry you two we'll lose them," commented Jarrod as he put the Sabre into a low dive to avoid the wing of a Turian frigate. The Turian Interceptors just did the same. Jarrod then pulled a hard U-turn (known as a roll-off-the-top) causing the Sabre to go upwards and round, going in the opposite direction of the Interceptors. The Turians were slow to recognize this as the Sabre flew right over their Interceptors. Six pulled another turn making the Sabre go down and around (a Split S). Now they were on the Turian's tail.

Jarrold pulled the trigger that released two Medusa missiles after targeting the innermost Interceptor. The Turian attempted to shake them but with the locking abilities it was useless. The Interceptor was destroyed as soon as the missiles caught up to it.

The two remaining Interceptors pulled a U-turn, now coming straight at the Sabre. They opened fire; Jarrod pulled another barrel roll and returned with plasma fire. R3 started to shriek again. "Easy little guy," shouted Jorge. Jarrod then fired more Medusa missiles.

One missile missed but the other made a successful hit on the Interceptor coming to their right, taking down its shield, near enough destroying it. Jarrod fired more Plasma bolts to finish it off, trying his best to keep the Sabre steady but also avoid the Turian's fire. As the Interceptor blew up Six had to pull a hard turn, putting the Sabre on its side so as to avoid a collision with the remaining Interceptor. R3 gave another shriek as the Turian Interceptor flew right beside (or in this case above) his dome head. The Interceptor did another U-turn; it was now back on their tail again.

Six was now getting annoyed; he decided to turn the Sabre upwards heading for the underside of a Turian cruiser. As he looked out the window he could see both Turian and UNSC crafts being destroyed by one another. It was obvious that the UNSC held the advantage in the

battle between warships and the Turian Interceptors were becoming increasingly outnumbered. The Longswords were racking havoc on the Turian ships. Since the Human-Covenant War they had been rebuilt equipped with a full anti fighter and ship loadout, with two anti fighter missile pods instead of the normal one and an anti missile pulse laser meant for missile interception duties. The newly equipped M-67 Micro MAC's were doing some real damage as well.

In an age where the point defenses of warships were devastatingly effective, from the traditional 50mm CIWS whose range was several thousand miles to any human warship's point defense lasers that could hole a lightly armored fighter from thousands of miles away in seconds and would zap missiles out of the sky, coupled with ever more powerful shields nothing short of swarms of single ships would have any effect on any respectably armed human warship. Something the UNSC had learned during the early years of the Insurrection the hard way.

As a result the UNSC turned to the arming of "Micro MAC's" onto its fighters. This allowed UNSC fighters to engage at longer ranges and snipe the hardpoints of enemy ships, usually from multiple vectors at a time to overcome powerful barriers with a squadron to either destroy the vessel or damage its point defenses enough to allow the much more powerful anti shipping missiles a better chance to hit the enemy.

Although it didn't pack anything remotely like its larger cousin and the secondary railguns of UNSC ships in terms of firepower, a 140mm slug that weighed 80 kilograms traveling at 600 kilometers per second still would do tremendous damage against "softpoints" of enemy ships, 3.4 kilotons of TNT in kinetic energy on impact.

As they passed beside a UNSC frigate it suddenly exploded the shockwave shaking the Sabre a bit. Jarrod kept on his course however, both Jorge and R3 didn't like were this was going.

"Six what are you doing," Jorge asked.

"You've known me for over a century Jorge, you should know me by now," replied Jarrod hoping that would cool the both of them.

"Exactly my point," stated Jorge.

Jarrod didn't reply that time he needed to concentrate. If he timed this wrong they could end up dying or with the turian still on their tail. As they got closer to the belly of the cruiser R3 didn't like where this was going, he started to give concerned beeps. Jorge didn't either, "Six". He ignored them, not yet he thought.

As they got closer Jorge spoke again "Six!" (Not yet) he thought again. One final time Jorge spoke this time louder "SIX!"

He calculated this was the best moment to do it, turning the Sabre he put it into a roll-off-the-top. As the Sabre turned it was just meters away from the cruiser. The Interceptor was not so lucky, going as fast as it was it was unable to slow down or pull off a turn like that. The craft slammed into the cruiser's barriers taking down a small part of the cruisers kinetic shield.

Jarrood gave an expression of satisfaction. Though Jorge was impressed he still had to rebuke him. "Next time tell me when you're going to pull a stunt like that."

Jarrood just had to laugh.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Space battle<strong>

Despite the OSA's original success the turians were still pressing towards Shanxi. They had lost 63 out of their original 120 strong fleet. Over half of their numbers. Meanwhile, the UNSC had lost 6 out of their 45. While the turians still had the advantage in numbers the UNSC ships had the power to overcome them. The only problem was that the amount of fire that the turian ships were pumping out was starting to take its toll on the shields of the UNSC cruisers. Most were still holding, but this would become a problem if this battle dragged out. The UNSC's CIWS and Laser Cannons had kept most of the turians disruptor torpedoes at bay, but there were a lot of them. Two more frigates and a destroyer's shields had be weakened by a constant barrage of torpedoes and then destroyed by the mass accelerator rounds from the turian cruisers and dreadnoughts.

The ODP's were in danger as well. They had been severely upgraded since the war with the Covenant, and it was a good thing otherwise they all would have been destroyed by now. At the orders of Desolas, at the start of the battle 30 of the surviving 60 frigates had split off from the fleet under the command of Actuss and attacked the ODP's. Now over half of the frigates under Actuss and Desolas's command had been destroyed. The \_Spirit of\_ \_Fire\_, \_Forward Unto Dawn\_, and the two normal carriers were doing their best to lead their frigates to protect the ODP's, but they couldn't be everywhere. One ODP had already been destroyed by the turians constant fire of disrupter torpedoes and another's shields were almost gone.

Worse, the surviving turian frigates were close enough to Shanxi that they launched shuttles down to the planet.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Shanxi<strong>

\*\*\*\*Shanxi Defense Force HQ\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*War room\*\*\*\*

General Williams had been watching the whole battle on the holotank. It was going reasonably well. The turians numbers and their rapid fire abilities were the main problem. The UNSC could win this fight, but at a cost of many brave men and women. But Lasky's reinforcements could change that if Cutter called upon him.

But right now Williams had matters of his own to attend to. Basically the turian shuttles no doubt carrying troops that had just breached Shanxi's atmosphere. As he had predicted the shuttles were heading for the outskirts of the city, no doubt to attempt making a push inside.

"Are the city's defense up?"



"Yes sir, they are online and ready to fire," replied an officer.

"Good give the command to open fire and get the ground to space weapons to destroy those remaining turian frigates before they destroy another ODP.

When the UNSC started losing their colonies to the Covenant and after the war the UNSC security committee along with the UEG Colonial Development they started to setup a colony's defenses before settling them first. In the hundred plus years that followed the UNSC with the help of their allies used their new knowledge and technology to increase the colony defenses of not just UNSC colonies but all OSA races.

Outside the city limits at the Firebases near farm lands twenty missile silos came up from the ground and began targeting up in the sky. Each silo contained five missiles all launched into space at the un-expecting Turians. Mark 2 Onagers or Mass Drivers came online to fire as well.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Shanxi<strong>

**\*\*Space Battle \*\***

**\*\*Turian Frigates\*\***

Tonn Actuss had been demoted from commanding a cruiser to a frigate. He was in charge with commanding the thirty frigates assigned to destroy the enemy's orbital defenses to save the fleet and make room for the ground forces. Some had managed to get through, but not nearly enough.

Now almost all of his ships had been destroyed by the enemy and the stations themselves. He had had no idea that the stations possessed anti-ship weapons. They had managed to destroy one of the stations and were almost done with another. He knew there was a chance that he wouldn't succeed in destroying all the stations; he only hoped Desolas could finish his work. Just then the ODP that they had been firing at for what felt like forever stopped working from taking on too much damage.

"Keep it up men, we just need to cripple the last two and then we can head down to the planet to reinforce our soldiers and lay waste to the enemy. We can still do this," said Actuss.

The crew cheered at their success and their commanders words. Actuss was just about to give out orders to continue on to the next station until the surface to space missiles hit his remaining twelve frigates. All were either destroyed or crippled except for his.

Actuss was happy the spirits were on his side and had spared his ship from destruction. "Alright men we need..." Tonn Actuss never finished his sentence as a mass driver fired a fifty cm round tungsten with 2.5 gigajoules of kinetic energy right through the frigate and out the other end that caused an explosion taking his and crews life.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Shanxi<strong>

**\*\*Turian Shuttle\*\***

Captain Cornelius Glaber sat in his shuttle with two combat teams of turian marines flying in the sky of the enemy's homeworld. There weren't nearly as many shuttles as he would have liked. The again he thought, with the way the battle was going it was a miracle any ship had been able to send any shuttles at all.

Their mission was to land at the outskirts of the planet's capital city, set up a base of operations, and then press into the city until it was captured. Cornelius like many turians came from a military family. He knew that currently they didn't have the numbers to capture the city. They would have to hold out and hope that Desolas could send reinforcements soon.

Cornelius looked out the viewscreen that showed the view outside the shuttle. They were currently approaching a forest and he could see the highlights of the city beyond it. He estimated it was about twenty clicks from the forest. As he continued to look he saw missiles rising into the sky heading to space, flashes of what must have been fire from planetary Mac guns followed in their wake. He was sure that his and the other shuttles could see the flashes of light in space when the missiles and Mac rounds struck the frigates they had but minutes ago left. Thirty seconds later the comm. in the pilots section at the front of the shuttle sounded off.

"All shuttles this is General Marcus Felix. As you may or may not have just saw all our frigates in orbit near this planet were just destroyed. I can't raise any of them. The enemy's capital city is just about 25 clicks out. We won't be able to depend on immediate reinforcements. We will just have to stand strong, hold out, and pray General Arterius will break through the enemy and send help. Felix out."

We're twenty-five clicks out people get ready," Cornelius called out as he saw his squad check and double check their gear.

All of a sudden missiles came out of nowhere heading towards the shuttles. Firebases near the farm lands on the outskirts of the capital city, the same ones that had destroyed the frigates in orbit moments ago, had spotted the turian shuttles coming on their radar. The stationary weapons platforms or Base Turrets immediately came online and open fired with their M202 XP Machine Guns and Rocket cylinders. The turian ground transports swerved to try to avoid the deadly fire, but the missiles seemed to be able to track them and a few shuttles went up in flames.

The comm.'s flared up again and General Felix shouted, "All shuttles land in those forest clearings it's too hot up here." Cornelius had to agree especially when the shuttle just ahead of his was destroyed by an Onager.

"Set the shuttle down pilot."

The shuttle landed and Cornelius and the two combat teams he was in

command of quickly vacated the shuttle. Around them other squads and teams were exiting their shuttles. They were all gathered in a huge clearing in the middle of the forest they had been flying over.

"We're going to wait here with the shuttles till you set up a base and call us in," shouted one of the pilots before he shut the shuttle doors.

"Where is General Felix," asked Cornelius.

A sniper turned to him to answer. "General Felix is dead. His shuttle was the last one to be destroyed, along with five others."

Cornelius was shocked. "Who is the next in command?"

The soldier replied, "You are Captain sir."

Now Cornelius was really shocked. He was in charge of an entire invasion force. Well it wasn't really all that big of an invasion but still. They had launched from the frigates with about 350 men, now there were about 245 left. All of them under his command.

"Does anyone know where those weapons came from?"

"Based on the missiles distance trajectory I calculate that they came from somewhere just outside the forest about 5 clicks from here. Most likely from a base of some kind," replied an engineer.

"Then that's where we're going. We need to capture or destroy that base before more shuttles come. Everyone gear up and move out."

After five minutes the Company of Turians headed out into the forest, unaware that they were being watched.

\_"Lucian's POV"\_

In the forest watching the turians from afar was Lucian, the chief and alpha of all Lycans. With him were a group of his most trusted men that were known as the **\*\*Alpha Dogs\*\***, the best fighting Company in Lucian's army.

The story of the Lycans was a sad one that did not need to be told. Many things had changed for the immortal species. They had a whole planet to themselves plus colonists or soldiers on several others. They had even been allowed to return to Earth. Although Lycans mostly kept to themselves they still kept up on galactic when Lucian heard about the events at Shanxi he immediately offered his support, and here he was. The Company of 150 Lycans were currently watching the turians depart their shuttles and move out into the forest.

"The enemy is at Company strength of 250 men heading straight for us," said Raze, Lucian's most trusted soldier and second in command, through the communicator.

"Copy that. We're going to launch a surprise blitz. Spread out and await my signal. Xavier take some men and take care of their shuttle pilots. If you're quick you might make it back in time for the action."

"Alright but fair warning, I'm not about to let you have all the fun dad."

Lucian could only smile and laugh at his son's words as the communicator cut out. His men had followed his orders and spread out amongst the trees. Once the turians were out of sight of their shuttles Lucian began to change.

He could feel the pain of the change. His muscles spamming and growing, his bones breaking and reforming, and his height increasing to name a few symptoms of the change. It had gotten easier the more often he transformed as the years went by.

Lucian's transformation was soon complete. When it was done he stood in his Super Lycan form standing at more than twice the size of a normal Lycan. Normally the change would have destroyed all his clothes, but thanks to the genius of Dr. Halsey all Lycans wore a specially created armor that was both strong and incredibly flexible. Able to stretch and grow through a Lycans transformation. Lucian gave the signal to attack in the form of a loud howl.

\_"Cornelius's POV"\_

Captain Cornelius and his men had been walking for about only five minutes at most. They had just lost sight of the shuttles when they heard a loud howl. Instantly the company stopped. That sounded like nothing Cornelius had ever heard before, and it was close by. The turians were so busy looking for the source of the howl that they weren't paying any attention to the ground.

Suddenly one, two, and then three turians disappeared below ground screaming as if they were grabbed. The left flank turned to fire at the ground but then several black blurs came out of nowhere and crashed them into the ground.

"SPREAD OUT," shouted Cornelius. His men attempted to follow his orders and succeeded to a degree. But they didn't get far before more of their attackers appeared and set upon them. Some came from between the trees running quickly on the ground; others came from the above jumping off tree branches.

Cornelius had managed to take cover behind a log. When he looked back he couldn't believe what he was seeing. His men were being ripped apart by what appeared to be giant canine creatures. Except they didn't look like anything he had ever seen. The closest thing he could compare them to were varren, but these creatures looked nothing like the famous pets and beasts of the Krogan. These creatures stood at about 6 ft at the smallest and 8 ft at the biggest. He also noticed a few whose height would tower over even an Elcor. They all had dark black fur with clearly visible large muscles, mouths full of sharp teeth, and were very strong as well as fast. They all appeared to be wearing armor. Cornelius witnessed one of his soldiers that had tried to get close with an Omi-Blade get his head ripped off from a swipe of one of the creatures paws. His men tried to fight back valiantly, but he could see it was futile. Any damage the creatures took they seemed to heal from.

"Fall back to the shuttles," called Cornelius. "RETREAT".

He didn't know if any had managed to follow him but Cornelius started running and didn't look back. He made it all the way back to the shuttles and pounded on one to be let in. When no answer came he opened the pilot's door to find the pilot dead with a huge bit wound. Cornelius checked all the other shuttles and found each pilot dead in the same way. He heard footsteps approaching and swerved around assault rifle poised to fire. The footsteps belonged to thirty turians that had managed to escape. Some of them were unharmed, others had minor to grieving wounds.

"Captain are you all right?"

"I'm alright but the pilots are dead. We're going to have to fly ourselves out of here."

"Or you could surrender," said another voice.

Cornelius turned around to look at the source of the voice. The voice came from a being that reminded Cornelius of an Asari. In fact it looked so much like an asari that with a few changes it could pass as one. He was also surprised that he could understand the alien. Then the alien raised its hand and snapped its fingers. The next thing Cornelius knew he and his men were surrounded by about ten of those canine creatures. He also saw more starting to appear from the direction of the fighting. That meant that all his men back there had been killed.

"Could this alien somehow control the beasts," he thought. If that was the case he knew he had no choice.

"Lay down your arms," said Cornelius to his men.

"Sir?"

"I SAID LAY DOWN YOUR ARMS," shouted Cornelius.

Slowly his men complied. More asari like beings came from out of the trees and took their weapons. Cornelius saw that they were wearing the same armor as the creatures and covered in blood.

"Good job boys I'm going to call for evac. You guys might want to change back.

Cornelius didn't know what the alien was talking about, but then before his eyes he saw all the canine creatures before him transform into asari looking aliens like the one before him. He thought the spirits were playing tricks on his eyes, but it was real.

Two minutes later Pelicans showed up to pick up the Lycans and their prisoners of war.

Xavier spotted his father and ran up to him. "I thought I said to save some for me."

Lucian just smiled and said, "I told you not to be slow."

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Turian Dreadnought<strong>

**\*\*Wings Glory\*\***

**\*\*CIC\*\***

Desolas Arterius was not happy in the slightest. The destruction of Tonn Actuss and the frigates under his command meant that those space guns were still online and wrecking havoc on his fleet. Since the battle had started he had lost one-hundred ships; fifty-eight frigates, thirty-five cruisers, and seven dreadnoughts; most of the damage being done by the enemy's powerful Mac guns and the plasma in the missiles the enemy used.

The enemy had lost twenty ships, bringing their numbers down to twenty-five. But they still had most of their cruisers and those four huge dreadnoughts (referring to the two Carriers, the Zeus, and the Spirit of Fire). All of his fighter support had been destroyed and all contact with the few soldiers that had been able to land on the enemy's homeworld had been lost as well. Just then the two remaining ODP's fired again; with one destroying two cruisers and the other destroying two frigates and a dreadnought. Desolas knew that the decision he was about to make would most likely ruin his military career, but he had no choice.

'I can't believe me, General Desolas Arterius of the Turian Hierarchy defeated,' he thought to himself.

"Order the fleet to retreat back through the relay," he said sounding like he could barley force himself to say those words.

"Sir, one of his officers looked to him questionably."

"YOU HEARD WHAT I SAID. The battle is lost, our ships are to damaged and won't be able to take much more punishment. We're out of disruptor torpedoes and have no reinforcements available. Order the retreat NOW."

'Yes sir!.'

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Spirit of Fire<strong>

**\*\*Bridge\*\***

Admiral (or Captain as he liked to be called) Cutter was both happy and sad. He was happy with his fleet's performance battling a numerically superior force, and he was sad about the many men and women that had died. He had lost twenty of his forty-five ships; thirteen frigates, four destroyers, and three Halcyon MK.2-class light cruisers; some of the frigates were just crippled and disabled instead of destroyed.

The CIWS and Laser Cannons had done a good job of protecting their ships against the enemy missiles. At least at long to medium range, short range was harder. Luckily the turians seemed to be all out of missiles. Seventy-five percent of the enemy's force had been destroyed and General Williams had reported that all turians groundside had been captured or killed.

Serina's avatar then came up. "Admiral the enemy just gave the order

to retreat."

Cutter smiled. "Did they now. Well me can't have that. You know the plan Serina."

"Of course I know the plan, I helped right it. The enemy is close enough to Shanxi to be completely vulnerable to an attack from the rear. I think we should call in Admiral Lasky."

"Agreed, send the message."

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Space Battle<strong>

Desolas ordered his surviving ships to retreat back through the relay. Yet no more than thirty seconds after the order had been given forty-five slipspace portals appeared and out came Infinity and the other ships of Battlegroup Dakota and Tsunami. They appeared at the Turians rear and quickly surrounded them. The following battle was very short. Infinity and company fired their Mac Cannons and Energy Projectors on the tuians rear destroying what little enemy resistance left.

One lone frigate managed to make an FTL jump back to the relay in the system, likely heading back to Turian space.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Turian Dreadnought<strong>

**\*\*Wings Glory\*\***

**\*\*CIC\*\***

Desolas was crawling around, blood flowing down his face. He was trying to get to the communications to send a message to the Hierarchy about this race and its capabilities. But he couldn't, he was to injured and had lost a lot of blood in the surprise attack. It was likely a useless gesture anyway, their communications were likely still blocked. He stopped and turned over looking at the inside of the CIC, he could hear his men who still clung to life coughing and spluttering.

"Sorry Saren, looks like I won't be there to share that bottle of brandy with you on Palaven." Desolas Arterious breathed his last breath then moved no more.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Damaged Turian Frigate<strong>

On board the Captain gave a sigh of relief, they had escaped with their lives. One of his officers walked up to him.

"Sir our engineers report that our systems are too badly damaged to travel all the way back to Turian space," he reported. The officer believed the captain wanted to head back and ask the Hierarchy for more reinforcements. The Captain however had other ideas.

"Will we be able to make it back to the Citadel" he asked. The officer was a bit confused by this question.

"Yes we should barely be able to but if we show up in this state" the Captain cut him off.

"Good get us to the Citadel."

The officer protested, "but the Council will want to know how our ship got damaged and will find out about the attack."

The Captain wasn't having any of it. "The battle is lost and we were lucky to escape alive thank the spirits, we are returning to the Citadel to warn the Council of the biggest mistake we have ever made". The officer just walked off at that and the frigate entered the Mass Relay.

The Captain knew it would take about three days to reach the Citadel. He just hoped nothing happened in that length of time.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>UNSC INFINITY<strong>

\*\*CIC\*\*

The battle was over; the Turian fleet had been decimated. All UNSC ships started to move into position beside disabled Turian vessels. They would be sending Spartans and boarding parties to capture the crew's. All surviving frigates started to search for escape pods.

Lasky was looking at a datapad reading the aftermath of the battle. Cutter had lost thirteen \_Paris-class Heavy\_ frigates, four \_Gorgon-class Heavy\_ destroyers, and three \_Halcyon MK.2-class light cruisers\_, although some of the frigates were only damaged or crippled. A total of twenty ships. It was more than Lasky would have liked and he wished that Cutter had called him sooner, but the plan had worked. Their fighter force had only suffered moderate damage. Most of the Spartans were grumpy that they didn't get to see much action though.

"Roland, have we heard from Lord Hood yet."

"Yes admiral, he said that we are to stick to the plan. Since \_Infinity\_ didn't really fight till the end and is undamaged we are to head through the relay to the turian colony of Gothi. He's also sending the necessary ships to rebuild Battlegroup Dakota, since we lent most of it to Admiral Cutter. We'll also have Battlegroup Tsunami at our command since they're relatively untouched. They'll come in as soon as we claim the system." All Spartan IV Fireteams have returned to \_Infinity\_.

"Good, we'll move out as soon as our new ships arrive."

\* \* \*

><p><strong>AN: I'M BACK EVERYONE. And this chapter is finally finished. I'm really really sorry for the long wait. College has been demanding what with the end of the semester. But I'm back now and



I'll do my best to not make you all wait so long next time.\*\*

\*\*So I hope you all like this chapter. I was going to add some parts with Spartans, but this chapter was already taking awhile. I might have rushed a few things let me know if you find any problems.\*\*

\*\*See you all later and I'll get started on the next chapter soon.\*\*

\* \* \*

><p><strong><strong> CODEX ENTRY- <strong>New Class Modernization Program- UNSC<strong>\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*NCMP: \*\*\*\*\*\_The New Class Modernization Program was started in 2578 as a standardization program to build new and better starships incorporated with the new standard technology. The UNSC came up with it and achieved these.\_

\*\*\*\*\*Golem-class Assault Destroyer: \*\*\*\*\*\_Based off the ancient Bothan Assault Cruiser the starship stands at 850 meters in length. It is armed with 2 Mac guns/Ion Cannons as its main armament; it is supported by 20 turbolasers, 24 Heavy double turbolaser cannons, 10 50mm point defense guns, and 20 Archer missile tubes. It is also the first destroyer with hangars \_(two in fact)\_ capable of housing four squadrons (48) starfighters. This ship is able to dish out much more close range punishment then it's Gorgon counterpart.\*\*\*\*\*

><strong>\*\*\*\*\_

\*\*\*\*\*Orin-class Battlecruiser: \*\*\*\*\*\_The step between a Gorgon-class Heavy Destroyer and a Marathon-class Heavy Cruiser is the Orion-class. At 900 meters in length it carries more firepower than a destroyer. It boasts 2 Mac guns/Ion Cannons, 20 turbolasers, 10 50mm point defense guns, and the largest number of Archer missiles on any UNSC ship available. It is arguably as well armed as a Super Carrier. The huge number of Archer missiles means a lack of hangar room. Built to soak up damage while giving as good as it gets.\_\*\*\*\*\*

><strong>\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*Phoenix-class Battleship:\*\*\*\*\* \_Based off the Phoenix-class Colony ship it is basically a fully upgraded version of the Spirit of Fire when it was first converted into a warship(only without the most bottom part). When the Spirit of Fire was first converted to a warship it only had light armor, an underpowered Mac gun, and the super-structure was vulnerable to light pulse laser fire. Now the new Spirit of Fire and the Phoenix-class Battleship is armed with a standard Mac gun, 22 Quad turbolaser cannons, 52 50mm point defense guns, 10 Mark 2500 Magnetic Accelerator Cannons (Mk.2 Onager), and 10 Archer missile tubes. Even with its firepower and armor durability, the Battleship is vulnerable to fighter swarms.

><em>

\*\*Mk. VI Orbital Defense Platform: \*\*\_The Mk. VI ODP is a cross between a Mk.V ODP and a Golan Space Defense Platform; with the Mac gun built around an extra large Golan Space station instead of old ring like station surrounding a ODP. It's the newest most powerful

ODP to date. It is capable of firing a 3,000 ton tungsten/depleted uranium projectile at point four-tenths, or 4%, the speed of light, around 12,000 kilometers per second. Impacting with a massive amount of kinetic energy, equal to approximately 5870 gigatons of TNT. Only the Didacts personal ship has been shown to survive the impact of these rounds. Against Covenant shield technology, the rounds possess enough kinetic energy to punch through shields, cut through the ship, and, upon exit, still retain enough energy to destroy a second ship, and cripple a third ship. The station is also built with shielding, a stronger hull, more precise targeting systems; the addition of 20 50mm point defense guns, 10 Rocket Turrets, 15 turbolasers, and \_laser cannons for\_ point-defense guns; and its very own station-based generator. Making the station self-containing. \_

## 7. Chapter 7: Retaliation part 1 - Gothis

\*\*A/N: I'M BACK EVERYONE! \*\*

\*\*Here is Chapter 7. I hope you all enjoy it.\*\*

\*\*This chapter will be part one of a three-part arc, and will include the OSA's attack on the Turian colony Gothis. There will also be a little surprise included in this chapter. I guarantee nobody will see it coming. There will be some heavy character background included in this chapter.\*\*

\*\*\*\*Again I wish to thank JediSpectrel77; some of this chapter is a template to JediSpectrel77's fic HaloMass Effect: Ruptured Universe Chapter 5.\*\*\*\*

\*\*I would like to remind everyone that this is obviously an AU fic. So many things will be different and altered to fit my fic.\*\*

\*\*My poll on adding the Chiss to this story is still up. PLEASE VOTE!\*\*

\*\*I do not own Halo, Mass Effect, Star Wars, or any other franchise.\*\*

\* \* \*

><p><strong>May 28, 26502157\*\*

\*\*Outside Turian Space\*\*

\*\*Battlegroup Dakota\*\*

\*\*Forward Unto Dawn\*\*

Battlegroup Dakota had been traveling through slipspace from Shanxi for a whole day. They had left when the replacement ships arrived. The battle group was back to its full strength of 52 ships. The addition of the \_Forward Unto Dawn \_brought the battlegroup up to fifty-three ships strong. They could have gone through the Mass Relays before traveling through slipspace to cut time, but Lasky wanted to catch the turians by surprise. Since the turians couldn't detect slipspace travel until the UNSC arrived it guaranteed that the fleet would remain hidden. The UNSC Fleet had dropped out of slipspace just outside of the colony's sensor range; they didn't want

the Turian fleet guarding the colony detecting them just yet.

Currently in the \_Dawn's\_ debriefing room were the UNSC's most famous Spartan team, Blue Team; lead by Master Chief Supreme Commander John-117. Blue Team had been transferred to the \_Dawn\_ from Shanxi to participate in its defense along with other Spartan Fireteams, but besides leading the capture of a few crashed Turian frigates and there crews they didn't see much action. Currently they were discussing with the holographic image of Fleet Admiral Lasky and Spartan-IV Commander Palmer about the attack on the Turian colony.

Chief moved to beside the holo-table, "Cortana can you bring up the image of the system, please."

"Of course John," answered the AI.

The image was provided by a \_Prowler\_ that had scouted out the system. Lasky then spoke up, "As you can see, there are minimal defenses in the system. The \_Aladdin\_ detected a patrol group of five ships circling the system for possible intruders, while the Turian colony Gothis has a defense fleet of fifteen ships and planetary Mass Accelerator Cannons around the planet for orbital defense."

Fred-104 couldn't help but be spectacle. It all seemed too easy. "That's all? From what I've read about them in the codex this seems a bit light in regards to Turian standards."

William-043 (or Will as he preferred to be called) had to agree with Fred, "Fred's right, from what we know about this planet it's basically the Turian's version of Reach and its defenses are fifteen times this size."

Linda-058 was busy reloading her sniper rifle, but one couldn't help but hear that there was a bit of hope in her voice. "Well we are pretty deep inside Council Space as they call it, or Turian Space to be more precise. Maybe they think no one's insane enough to attack the peacekeeping military force of the Citadel Council."

"Well it's a good thing we're a lot crazier than most other species in the galaxy," said Will in his usual joking way.

John looked over at Will with a smile even if no one could see it. During the war John had thought that Will had lost his "special side" as his lifetime of combat hardened him, as it had with all the original Spartans. But during the many years of peace, he seemed to recover it, even holding on to it during the other wars and campaigns the last hundred years.

Samuel-034 (or Sam) scoffed at the notion, "We're not that crazy. OK we are I admit it."

"It doesn't really matter why they have such light defenses, at least it makes things easier on us," said John before anyone could say anything else.

As everyone took in what the Master Chief said, Admiral Lasky began to get the discussion back to the attack plan. "Chief's right, it makes things easier on us. Anyway let's get to the plan."

As he spoke Cortana caused the holo-image to zoom in on the Turian colony of Gothis. "Our first objective will be to take out the main fleet over the colony. The patrol fleet is currently on the far side of the system out of our range so they'll most likely be able to escape through the relay to get reinforcements. In that case we'll have to move quickly to take the colony. Missile strikes should destroy their groundside cannons. Once their taken care of we can then begin launching our troops and armor forces to take their bases while cutting off their radar and communications."

"Oh and don't worry about that patrol fleet, we'll be taking care of it," said a new voice.

All heads turned to the source of the voice, which turned out to be a hologram. The person in the hologram wore Mandalorian armor so he was obviously Mandalorian. John could see a mark on the warriors shoulder pad that he recognized. It was shaped like a\*\* \_jai'galaar\_\*\*, or a shriek-hawk, in mid-dive; the symbol of the Death Watch.

Even though the OSA had met the Mandalorians over 50 years ago it was still amazing how very human they looked. The first Mandalorians that the OSA met were at first mistaken for humans because of their human appearance, like the Miraluka only with eyes. The biggest difference between humans and what are now known as Pure Mandalorians are their skin pigments. Pure Mandalorians have Caucasian skin with a green pigment mixed in. This came from the ancestors of the Mandalorians the \*\*Taung's\*\*, from which all Mandalorians evolved from. After the Mandalorian Wars species from all over the OSA were accepted into Mandalorian clans. First you had to pass some tests to prove your loyalty, and then you were injected with a special serum infused with Pure Mandalorian DNA. It wasn't widely known that a specially engineered virus containing nanite drones were mixed into serum. The drones searched the deepest caverns of your brain. If you truly wished to become a Mandalorian you would live and the serum would brand the clans mark on your body, turning that section Mandalorian green. If you didn't wish to join and were lying for some reason the drones would fry your brain, killing you instantly. Any species could become a Mandalorian if they were tough and proved themselves true. This Mandalorian was a Pureborn judging by his face which was green and Caucasian.

"I'm Major Jango Fett of the Death Watch. I've been sent here on the orders of Mandalore the Preserver to provide assistance. I have a small fleet at the polar opposite of your location. When you enter the system and engage the main fleet my ships will engage the patrol group. We'll then send forces to storm the capital city and its surrounding lands. Together we'll have Gothis under our control long before any reinforcements arrive.

"Major Jango Fett this is Fleet Admiral Lasky, I'll take any help I can get. Have your ships jump to hyperspace and set your coordinates for the turians patrol group. Move out on my mark."

"Copy that sir, over and out," said Jango as his hologram cut off.

"Roland take us to Gothis."

"Yes admiral." Lasky then used his neural implant to address the

entire fleet. \_  
><em>

\_("Attention all hands, prep for slipspace launch.)\_

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Turian Colony<strong>

**\*\*Gothis\*\***

**\*\*Turian Colonial Defense Fleet\*\***

The captain of the fleet was extremely bored. Gothis was a colony in Turian space for training recruits in the Turian army and navy, named after an old colony lost in the Unification War. While it was an important colony to the Hierarchy, it was complete madness to think that anyone would be foolish enough to attack the colony, and by extension the Hierarchy itself. So he didn't get to see a lot of action. He'd heard a rumor that the Hierarchy was gathering a fleet of ships to subdue a new race that attempted to reactivate a dormant Mass Relay, which of course was against Council law. He laughed at the idea of how the mighty Turian fleet was probably crushing the new species.

The sensors officer then interrupted his train of thought upon seeing a strange anomaly. "Captain I'm detecting spatial ruptures ahead of us!"

The captain looked out the view-screen and saw what looked like worm holes, too many and too unnatural to be natural. Before the captain could give a response a fleet of unidentified ships exited the worm holes lead by a 5.6 kilometer long monstrosity that appeared out of the largest. The only thing that came to mind in the captain's head was that they were under attack! He moved into action by screaming out orders. "Get our weapons online and kinetic barriers up! Warn the Generals on the planet we are under..." Before he could finish his last order, the alien fleet had opened fire. The turians never had a chance. The \_Infinity\_ took out most of the ships with its four Mac guns and its Energy Projector. The rest were finished off by a few Mac rounds from the rest of the fleet.

The captain's last thought before he died was that hopefully the patrol fleet could escape and warn the Hierarchy about this attack.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Turian Colony<strong>

**\*\*Gothis\*\***

**\*\*Death Watch Fleet\*\***

After Battlegroup Dakota entered slipspace Jango ordered his fleet to jump to hyperspace. It was a relatively short jump. When they exited FTL they came out almost right on top of the Turian Patrol Fleet. If you could call five ships a fleet. Jango was currently in command of 10 \_Mandalorian Cruisers\_, 5 \_Keldabe\_-class battleships\_, 3 \_Kyramud\_-type battleships\_, and 2 \_Mandalorian Carriers\_. As soon

as they exited hyperspace the battleships open fired with their Ion Cannons and then followed up with their turbolasers and heavy concussion missiles.

The results were instantaneous. Once the first four ships were immobilized by the Ion Cannons the combined turbolaser fire either destroyed or crippled the vessels. Those that weren't out right destroyed had their hull shattered by the heavy kinetic power of the concussion missiles. The Turians never even got the chance to fire. Only one ship survived the onslaught and decided to get the hell out of Dodge. Its shields had collapsed due to the concussion missiles; just narrowly avoided being damaged to bad by the turbolasers and escaped through the relay.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Mandalorian Cruiser "<em>Battle Cry"<em>\*\*\*

**\*\*Main Bridge\*\***

Jango Fett was very pleased with his fleet's dealing with the turian patrol group.

"Sir one ship in the Turian patrol group managed to escape," said the sensors officer.

The sensors officer thought Jango would be furious, but he just smiled. "Good, now they can warn the Hierarchy about those they tried to subdue. Let them come and we will show them just who it is they're messing with!" Move all ships towards the northern pole of the planet and prepare to launch our Basilisk war droids at the capital.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Turian Colony<strong>

**\*\*Gothis\*\***

**\*\*UNSC INFINITY\*\***

"The main colony fleet has been destroyed Admiral Lasky."

"Thank you Roland. Open a communications line with the colony I've got something to say."

"Yes sir." Roland then activated the comm. system as Lasky stepped in front of the projector.

"This is Admiral Thomas Lasky of the Orion Systems Alliance to all Turians on the colony of Gothis. Yesterday your Hierarchy attacked one of our planets hoping to subdue us and take our technology. We defeated them and now we're here for retribution, power down all your weapons and surrender. Do so and none of you shall be harmed, failure to do so and any attack on our vessels will result in hostile action and I will not be able to assure your safety."

Lasky's message was quickly answered when he saw a mass accelerator round come from the colony, impacting one of his frigates. The ship didn't blow but its shields were now almost gone.

Lasky then turned to the weapons officer. "I want a missile strike on that cannon. Tell all ships to proceed as planned."

\* \* \*

<p><strong>Turian Colony<strong>

**Gothis**

**Ground to Orbit, Mass Accelerator cannon facility.**

When the warning had come in that they were under attack every Turian on Gothis began preparing for invasion. Pilots were scrambling to their interceptors, the MA canons were prepped and defenses were being set up at important locations.

At one of the MA canon facilities a general was listening to the message sent by Admiral Lasky. Blinded by rage and fury that the Hierarchy had lost and that they were being demanded to surrender, he made a rash decision that he wouldn't live to regret.

"Target one of those ships and fire the cannon," he ordered.

The facility began to shake as the cannon fired a round at one of the alien ships, a UNSC frigate to be exact. The General watched as the round impacted the vessel on the holo- projector. He was dumbfounded when the ship remained standing. Though it looked like its shields were down, any other ship that size would have been torn to shreds.

"Get the cannon up again, fire another round," he ordered. As the men moved to do as they were told there was a loud, thunderous sound followed by violent shaking of the facility. That shaking was not done by the canon. The facility had been hit by a missile strike from the \_Infinity \_causing it to be destroyed and everyone inside to die.

Around Gothis the UNSC tore a great path of destruction. From orbit their ships fired their Mac rounds and missiles, destroying radar towers and communications buildings putting the Turians in the dark groundside. While the UNSC ships took care of communications, the Mandalorian vessels took care of any planetary guns and anti-ship turrets groundside, using their turbolasers to fire at them from orbit. The turbolasers had a small-scale glassing effect on the areas hit by them. Setting the land on fire and turning the ground to lava.

\* \* \*

<p><strong>Gothis<strong>

**Turian Airfields**

At one of Gothis's many airfields turian pilots were scampering around trying to get to their fighters and interceptors. They had received the call five minutes ago that told them Gothis was under attack. Though they were going as fast as they can, they were forced to double time it when the flash of what appeared to be green lasers appeared over the hills on the landscape; flying down on the planetary gun that lay on the opposite side of the hills.

As they started running to their now prepped aircrafts, the AA guns of the airfield opened fired on an alone enemy aircraft. To the Turians it was a completely alien design. To humanity however its appearance and design was similar to their late twentieth century military plane the F-22 Raptor, but with a more modern futuristic design, and it was red and white. The aircraft however was nothing like the OSA or UNSC currently used, it was the only one of its kind. That would be true if it was anything but just a vehicle.

The ship performed evasive maneuvers by doing several barrel rolls to the left and right, dodging the majority of AA fire. On each wing a flap opened up, revealing two missile launchers. The aircraft returned fire releasing a spray of projectiles on the Turian pilots and auto-targeting the AA guns. The AA guns went up in flame and smoke as the missiles destroyed them. Next the Turians were in for a surprise as the aircraft descended low towards the airfield, heading straight for the Interceptors and Fighters.

Its wings started to part from the main body and began turning in on themselves, splitting in two again. The aircraft slowed as it got close to the fighters. Then from the wings a pair of robotic legs sprouted, followed by a pair of arms. The whole thing was changing, its parts moving, transforming. Then the now humanoid robotic machine spoke.

"Whoa stick the landing," it said as its feet landed, skidding into several fighters and interceptors destroying them in the process.

"Behold the glory of Jetfire turians," said the robot as it grabbed an interceptor and threw it at a couple of fighters. A sword then formed from his back which he quickly grabbed and swung at the Turian aircrafts. A pair of rocket launchers formed on his right wrist as he open fired while swinging his axe and sword. The Turians returned fire but their weapons were ineffective against him.

"Jetfire are you done yet, we've still got other airfields to take care of," said a voice over his com.

"All right hold you're Energon Silverbolt, I have a couple more to destroy," he responded while taking out a few more fighters and interceptors with swings from his sword and missile fire.

The Turians continued to fire on him as he transformed back into vehicle mod. He launched several missiles destroying the last of the Turian's aircrafts. Engaging his thrusters he shot off at high speeds, leaving the Turians of the airfield dumbfounded as to what to do since all their aircrafts had been destroyed.

At another airfield elsewhere on Gothis a group of fifteen Turian gunships had been successfully launched just before the airfield was destroyed by a UNSC cruiser. Seeking vengeance for their fallen comrades and driven by rage the gunships flew up and opened fire on the cruiser.

Instead of returning fire (the fire from the gunships made no difference anyway) the cruiser opened up one of its hangar bays. Inside preparing to launch were Ikran Maktos (Aka: Ikran riders or warriors). Na'vi warriors who rode on the back of the large,



bird-like aerial predators called Ikrans (Once referred by the RDA as Banshees; now called by the Na'vi name to avoid confusion with the Covenant vehicle) that were native to the Na'vi homeworld of Pandora.

Due to the atmospheric properties of their homeworld, like Unggoy the Na'vi and Ikrans had to wear special breathing equipment. Though they continued to wear primitive clothing on their colonies and homeworld, Na'vi warriors and soldiers that fought in the OSA military wore body armor similar to that of human soldiers. Ikran riders were given a special type of gun that gave them the same firepower as Hornets and Banshees.

Once they were given the signal to launch the lead rider complied and flew out the hangar bay followed by twenty-nine other riders. Believing the Ikrans to be simple slow-moving fighters, the gunships changed course headed straight for the Ikran Maktos. The pilots attempted to fire missiles at the Ikran wave but found they were unable to auto-target the beasts. They soon found out why.

Ikran riders open fired on the Turian gunships, the plasma from the guns passing right through the shields melting the metal. Despite them requiring both their hands to work the gun the Na'vi were still able to control their Ikrans through their neural queue which on Na'vi appeared like braided human hair.

The Turians were totally caught off guard when it turned out they were engaging animals and not vehicles. The lead Gunship was attacked by the leading rider, the force of the beast slamming and clutching on caused the gunship to spin out of control; the other gunships had to perform evasive maneuvers in order to avoid it.

The Turian pilot tried desperately to regain control of the aircraft. However the rider acted fast by firing into the cockpit, shattering the glass and killing the pilot. With the pilot died the Rider and his mount let go of the gunship leaving it to spirally descend to the scorched earth.

The gunships that had no Ikran Maktos clinging to them engaged the flying war beasts. This turned out to be a useless gesture as the Ikran were equipped with their own shield that was integrated with their breathing equipment, which formed something like an invisible, protective bubble around the animal and its rider.

The Ikran Maktos were able to take down six gunships before they were joined by a Phantom and ten Banshees. The nine remaining gunships tried their best against them but to no avail.

With the combined might of the Ikran tearing pilots from their cockpits, the Banshee plasma fire burning through the gunships armor without any regards to its shields, and the firepower from the Phantom, the Turians didn't stand a chance.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Gothis<strong>

\*\*Lower orbit\*\*

\*\*Forward Unto Dawn\*\*

**\*\*Hanger\*\***

In the hangar of the Dawn Jedi Master Rada Vadam was currently preparing himself for meeting with his fellow Jedi Knights that had been brought along for the attack. They had set up a small landing area so they could gather their equipment. The Dawn however would not be landing at their location.

Rada strapped an Antigravity Pack (Sometimes called a Sangheili jetpack) to his back and had a quick check to make sure his armor was firmly on. He double checked to make sure his weapons were tight fastened, he didn't want them falling off with what he was about to do.

Cortana's voice came over the intercom as Master Chief approached him.

"ETA three minutes before we reach your destination Rada."

Rada looked up as if she was directly looking down at him, "Thank you Cortana."

Chief and Rada then looked out of the hanger at the landscape before them. The Dawn was currently passing over an area that had been blasted by turbo lasers five minutes ago. They were captivated by the destructive scene.

"Sigh," it reminds me of glassing. It has been so long since I last saw one. I know we only use turbolasers in this way as a last resort, but I always thought we'd never have to use them like this again," commented Rada the clear sign of sorrow in his voice.

Chief could understand how he felt. Not since the First Galactic War had Glassing been used, and not since then had turbolasers been used in this manner. The only time glassing had been used over the past decades was for the extermination of flood colonies. But those were very rare.

"We gave them the chance to surrender; we warned them what we would do. They choose to fight. At least there's no civilians to risk killing," said John.

"Hmm yeah, you're right. Anyway what did you want?"

"I was about to tell you our ETA but Cortana beat me. Looks like you're all ready to go."

"Yep I just better time the jump right or goodness knows where I'll land. Where are you lot going by the way."

"Once we drop you off I'll be leading Blue Team to some research stations and other facilities to gather any information we can."

They just stood there talking for three minutes until Cortana interrupted them as the Dawn started to fly over a forest.

"We're nearly over them; better get ready to jump Rada."

"Sorry I'd better head now, see you both later."

Rada walked to the edge of the Hanger. He turned round to face them, crossed his arms and fell out the hanger backwards. Failing at ten miles an hour, Rada's world was currently upside down as he plummeted to the ground below. Looking down at the forest (or in this case up) he could see the clearing were several Pelicans and Falcon's had landed and the Jedi forces were gathering. Twirling around so he was going into an actual dive he activated his Antigravity pack, slowing his descent. As he got closer to the ground he brought himself upright so his feet would land first and not his face. Around him were about two dozen Jedi knights, all of them he knew by name and the majority he had even trained.

Except for a few species there were Jedi Knights from all the OSA races, even the Unggoy had some of their species as Jedi. Rada couldn't help but chuckle when he noticed a Unggoy talking with a Jiralhanae. Despite all they were known for, the Unggoy Jedi Knights were not to be trifled with. He thought back to a dark time in OSA history, back when it was the Covenant, the Unggoy rebellions. The Covenant back then would have had a different view of the Unggoy if they had Jedi.

Before he moved out he sensed a familiar presence coming to him. Looking around he saw a cloaked figure, wearing a red and black mask of Mandalorian design walking towards him. The clothing or armor the person wore was similar to that of the ancient Japanese Samurai. Rada smiled, even though he couldn't see the man's face he knew exactly who it was.

"Nice to see you again Master Vadam."

"Revan, my old padawan. It's nice to see you to."

"Nice entrance you did there by the way."

"Well John and the rest of them had other places to be. I can image they'll be doing a similar entrance although with more leaving a crater in the ground," Rada laughed. "Anyway what's been going on?"

"We land only a few minutes ago, we're just making sure we have enough medkits."

"Where is the \_Ebon'Hawk\_," Rada asked.

"Left it on-board the Shadow of Intent under care of T3-M4," Replied Revan.

"What about the others."

"They went to Shanxi to help with the clean-up and interrogations, they'll catch a ride here when Battlegroup Tsunami arrives".

"Right get everyone ready we're about to move out," ordered Rada.

As Revan walked away to carry out his orders, Rada couldn't help but think about his old apprentice and how proud he was to know him. Revan was the most powerful Jedi in the whole order. Kreia, one of his masters before she died had said, "\_Revan was power. It was like

staring into the heart of the Force.\_" Rada had felt the same way. Revan had many teachers and he counted himself lucky to be among them. His old padawan was also a mechanical genius, charismatic, master military tactician, intelligent, decisive, loyal, compassionate, and a skilled pilot. A very talented person. He was also one of the Jedi's greatest swordsman; he also was a master at hand-to-hand fighting as well as firearms. The mask Revan wore was from a Mandalorian woman and it held a great deal of symbolical and emotional meaning to Revan. But those were thoughts for another time.

Yes he could honestly say that he was proud to know the young Jedi.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Gothis<strong>

**Gothis Capital City**

Hell. That was the shortest word to describe the situation in the capital city of Gothis. After gaining orbital superiority over the northern quadrant of Gothis, the Mandalorians started to destroy any planetary guns and anti-ship turrets around the capital city. Once that was done swarms and swarms of Basilisk War Droids launched from their Carriers towards the city. When the droids and the riders on their backs had the city in their sites, they immediately open fired with their shockwave generator rods, laser cannons, and pulse-wave cannons of the turians defensive positions.

That was thirty minutes ago. Since then the rain of destruction had increased ten fold. The cannons on the Basilisks rained complete havoc on the turians fortified positions while their riders took puck shots from their mounts. The lasers blasted the turians completely ignoring their kinetic barriers. Some Basilisks had used their powerful clawed front legs to stick to buildings so they could strike the enemy from far above. Snipers tried to take shots at the Mandalorian riders, only for their shots to get absorbed by the shields of the Basilisk. Then the snipers were usually vaporized via a returning pulse-wave cannon blast.

While the turians weapons had relatively no effect on the War Droids, some were taken out by a combination of the turians Mako tanks and rocket launchers. The turians roared with new-found hope that their enemy was not invincible. Their hope was soon "picked up and choked to death" so to speak. The Basilisks had destroyed all anti-air turrets in half the city. This allowed the **\_Kom'rk\_-class** fighter/transport **to** fly in unopposed. Hovering 15 ft above the ground hatches on the ventral surface of the ships opened up revealing a troop bay. Twenty-four Death Watch flyers launched from each ship, equipped with jetpacks similar to those found on Spartan armor. The new troops used their flight speed, WESTAR-35 blaster pistols, wrist rocket launchers, and wrist flamethrowers to launch quick and extremely deadly fast raids on exposed turian soldiers; while the Basilisks focused on the Mako's.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Gothis Capital City<strong>

## **\*\*Death Watch HQ\*\***

Major Jango Fett was currently in the middle of the set up HQ wearing his Shock Trooper Armor. His forces had managed to capture half of the city in two hours. The tuigans had solidified the other half of the city and were holding tight. He could just send in some Basilisk War Droids to try to destroy their front line defenses; but scouts had reported that turian tanks called "Mako's" were waiting to blast them out of the sky with a barrage of cannon fire. That usually meant that he would have to send in his men on the ground, which would give the turians the even ground, maybe even the advantage due to having fortified positions. But he could work around that. Anyone who knew Jango knew that he had been in much tougher spots than this.

## Character Background Begin

Jango Fett was a Mandalorian born on **\*\*Concord Dawn\*\***, an agricultural world in the Mandalore Sector. Born to a family of farmers, Jango grew up alongside his parents and his older sister Arla. His father served as a Journeyman Protector, a civilian lawman on Concord Dawn. Soon after Canderous Ordo became the new Mandalore after the Mandalorian War, Jango learned the hard way that not all Mandalorians agreed with the ways of their new leader. A civil war broke out between those who followed Canderous (the True Mandalorians) and a splinter group that called themselves the Death Watch.

When Jango was eight years old his father offered some True Mandalorian soldiers, led by Jaster Mereel, refuge on his farm after a lost battle with the Death Watch. The Death Watch caught up with the True Mandalorians at the homestead and their leader Tor Vizsla captured Jango, using him in an attempt to root Jaster and his men out of hiding. Vizsla savagely beat Jango's father in front of him while he demanded the location of Jaster and his men, even going so far as threatening to shoot him in the head right in front of his son. However, Jango's mother intervened, shooting one of the Death Watch in the face with a blaster rifle and in the ensuing chaos, his father ordered him to run. Fleeing into the nearby crop field, Jango was rescued by Jaster and his soldiers while his parents were murdered and his sister taken by the Death Watch.

With his family dead and his home in ruins, Jango joined the True Mandalorians as they regrouped in a nearby town in order to stage an ambush on the Death Watch. Believing their enemies dead, Vizsla and his men moved into the town on a celebratory raid, only to come under fire from the True Mandalorians, attacking from street alleys and high windows. Using the firefight as a distraction, Jango planted an explosive charge beneath the Death Watch's armored tank, destroying it. He was attacked moments later by the Death Watch soldier responsible for the deaths of his parents and although the rogue Mandalorian slashed him with his gauntlet's vibroblade, Jango was able to snatch up a blaster, shoot and kill his parents' murderer. Having proven himself in Jaster's eyes, after the fighting was over he was taken in by Jaster, who raised him as he was his own son.

Up into his teenage years Jango served with Jaster and his forces against the Death Watch. Rising to the rank of Commander. During a battle on Korda 6, a trap was sprung by the Death Watch. The result: Jaster's second-in-command Monstross betrayed Jaster and left him to

die at the hands of Tor Vizsla, Monstross tried to take over saying that Jango had died trying to save Jaster; but Jango appeared and revealed the truth. Monstross was killed and Jango donned Jaster's armor, and took over command.

Some time later Death Watch set another trap on Galidraan. Vizsla made a deal with the corrupt governor to fund Death Watch's rebuilding; as well as, send a distress signal Jango and his men, telling him that Death Watch was attacking. In exchange Vizsla would assassinate all the governor's political protesters. Jango and a company of his men arrived as planned. The governor then sent a message to Coruscant saying that Mandalorians were killing "political activists", along with women and children with Vizsla's own forces providing the body count of innocents and begging the Jedi Council to step in and put a stop to them.

When the Jedi arrived Jango thought that they would believe he and his men were responsible for Vizsla's actions. But he was pleasantly surprised when Jedi Master Dooku asked him where the Death Watch were. Seeing that his plan was foiled Vizsla was forced to retreat, after he killed the governor. However six Jedi, including Dooku's apprentice Kimari Vosa, were convinced that Jango and his men were the culprits and attacked, killing twenty-one of Jango's men, including his second-in-command Myles. It was then that Jango would carry out the act that would make him both famous and infamous for the rest of his life and career: using no weapon beyond his own hands he vengefully killed the six Jedi, including Kimari Vosa.

Two years later, Jango finally tracked down Vizsla over Corellia, fought him and then killed him. The Mandalorian Civil War was finally over. After the war Jango became lost with no purpose. When Canderous offered him to lead a new Death Watch he was putting together Jango refused. He spent the next few years as a bounty hunter, quickly becoming one of the best. Canderous tracked him down eventually and made him another offer; a place in the Mandalorian Grand Army and to be a template for an army of clones, saying that Jango was a true Mandalorian and that there was no one else he would trust more for the job. What really sold Jango was that Canderous told him that his sister Arla Fett had been found alive. She had been abducted by Death Watch and then eventually joined their ranks as an assassin. She was arrested ten years ago, deemed mentally unstable and was ordered to be held in the Valorum Center a mental institution on Coruscant. If Jango joined up he'd get her transferred to a facility on Mandalore. Jango agreed, but also on the condition that an unaltered clone be given to him.

And so that was his story. Jango named the clone Boba Fett and he was raising him like a son. He also viewed Boba as someone to carry on Jaster's legacy. Jango assisted in the design of the armor worn by the clones in the Clone-Joint Species Army. He was also responsible for hand picking their instructors (besides himself) and personally oversaw the training of the \*\*Alpha-class Advanced Recon Commandos (ARC Troopers), considered the most skilled and elite soldiers in the Clone-Joint Species Army.

\_Character Background End\_

Jango watched as the \_Meteor-class Q-Carriers\_ started to land in the makeshift LZ. The Neo-Crusaders inside started to disembark. If he sent them in on foot they'd be much more vulnerable to the turians

Makos. Flyers could cause some havoc on the turian troopers, but they would have trouble taking out the tanks without specialized gear. All and all the enemy was too well positioned and he would need a distraction. As a new image appeared on the holo-tank Jango got an idea.

A \_Phoenix-class Battleship \_had appeared on the horizon from the south. Behind their position. The turians couldn't see it, but Jango and his soldiers could. Using the rangefinder equipped into his helmet Jango saw that the ship was named the \_Dragon's Fire\_. Looking up the ship, on a datapad that listed all the ships taking part in this invasion, showed that it was carrying two **\*\*Manta-Stealth Sub/Frigates\*\***. He didn't know who was in the Manta's, but maybe he just found his game changer.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>UNSC Phoenix-class Battleship - Dragon's Fire<strong>

**\*\*Hangar\*\***

**\*\*\*Manta-Stealth Sub/Frigate#1\*\*\***

When the OSA was formed all races shared and compared history. Not just military and the typical type of history, but media history as well. Anime, cartoons, and old TV shows from the 21st Century on Earth became a huge hit. Their success increased with almost every race that joined the OSA since then. The old super hero shows based off the ancient Marvel and DC comic books were some of the most successful. Some companies and military's tried to replicate some of the ideas and materials from the shows.

The Manta-Stealth Sub/Frigate was created by the Mon Calamari. It was inspired and based off the Manta-Sub that served as Black Manta's mobile base in the old **\*\*Young Justice \*\***cartoon. Like in the show the vessel is capable of acting as a mobile base, it also possesses a large docking bay for Manta-Flyers and Manta-sub attack crafts. Unlike in the show the craft is capable of traveling in space as well as water. It's main purpose is that of a mobile stealth base. It was also partly inspired by the joint Gungan/UNSC project that created the **\*\*\_Mantaris\_-class amphibious medium transport\*\***.

Currently standing in the docking bay was a human about 6 ft 10.0 in with brown hair and blue eyes. He was Captain Carter-A259, leader of the second most famous Spartan team of all time, Noble Team. While he and all of Noble Team wore MJOLNIR armor, everyone on the team except for Jorge-052 were Spartan-III's. Like some other Spartans that served in the Human-Covenant War Carter tried to leave military life and live as a civilian. Predictably, it didn't work out. Currently Carter and the rest of Noble Team were waiting for the Manta to leave the battleships hangar so they could get underway.

Their wishes were soon granted as the stealth ships A.I came to life broadcasting a message to the whole crew.

\_Attention all hands, prep for launch. Repeat prep for take off.\_

"All right Noble here we go", said Carter. Beside him he could see

his team mates Catherine-B320 (commonly known as Kat), Emile-A239, Jorge-052, Jun-A266, and Jarrod-B312 ready for action.\_  
><em>

The Manta shifted a little as it powered up and lifted off the battleships hangar floor. It flew out of the hangar quickly followed by another close behind it. The captain of the Manta called Carter telling him to bring his team to the bridge. When they arrived the captain was conversing with a hologram of a Mandalorian.

"Captain Carter. Noble Team. I'm Major Jango Fett of the Death Watch. I'm pleased to see you Spartans. My situation has turned sour, my forces have captured half of the capital but the turians are set in real good in the other half. They've got a whole tank column waiting to blow my men out of existence if I charge by foot and rockets to shoot my men down by air. I'm looking at a stalemate that can only be broken by sacrificing a lot of my men. And the longer I wait the more likely they'll attack first. I could use your help Captain."

"We're ready to help in anyway we can Major. We also have another Manta carrying a Clone Commando Squad. They can help as well," replied Carter.

"Excellent. It just so happens that I do have a secondary target. If they're as good as they're supposed to be it shouldn't be a problem. I'm uploading the mission parameters to you now."

"Received, we'll get right on it."

"Good, Jango out." His hologram cut off.

Emile spoke up. "Sounds like we've got work to do. Taking out a whole column of tanks with half a city between us and them. Sounds like a noble mission to me."

"Well have to avoid attention until we have the tanks in our sights," said Kat.

"We'll make it happen. Head to the armory," replied Carter.

They walked down two corridors to the armory to gear up. Brass had advised them to deck themselves out with weapons that would give them an advantage. In the armory where weapons of UNSC, Covenant, Mon Cala, etc origin. It even contained weapons that had been created after the fallout on Far Isle. Most wastelanders no longer used their old weapons after being equipped with the latest OSA technology, preferring to either sell their weapons to museums, private collectors, or keep them for memories sake. But some weapons were recreated and grafted into the UNSC's and OSA's arsenal. All fallout weapons that were recreated were now classified as the F7-series.

Carter equipped himself with his trademark M395 Designated Marksman Rifle (DMR) and a DC-15S blaster carbine.

Kat chose an M6H Pistol, a Z-110 Directed Energy Pistol/Exotic or the Boltshot as a backup, and a DC-15S blaster carbine.

Jun chose a F7 Gauss rifle and a DC-17 repeater hand blaster.



Jorge was going with his trademark modified M247H Heavy Machine Gun and a Z-6 rotary blaster cannon, which was basically a smaller blaster chaingun, as a backup.

Emile armed himself with a M45D Shotgun, a M319 Individual Grenade Launcher, and his signature KuKri knife.

Jarrood picked out a DC-17 hand blaster, a Z-250 Directed Energy Engagement Weapon or Lightrifle, and a F7 Tesla Cannon.

Once they all had their weapons Nobel Team headed back to the docking bay to board a Manta Flyer. The ship's A.I 's voice was again sounded off on the ship's intercom.

\_"All hands prepare to dive."\_

That was their cue to board the flyer. An underwater missiles platform was attached to the flyer so it halled it through the water. The familiar splash was heard signaling that the Manta had entered sub mode and was underwater. In the flyers small command center Jun noticed a package. The captain of the Manta then appeared on the hologram projector.

"Noble Team in this package is a H-295 Target Designator. Your mission is to reach the turian tank column and designate the target for the missile platform \*(1)\*. Try not to draw too much attention to yourselves while you're at it."

"Understood sir," said Carter.

When the captain's hologram disappeared Noble got ready to move out. The flyer dropped the missile platform leaving it in the care of a squad of Mon Calamari soldiers. Scanners indicated that there was a small squad of turians near Nobles drop of point.

"Six you take out that squad, quietly," said Carter.

Six just nodded to show he heard.

The Manta Flyer breached the surface just enough for the back door to open. Six was the first out and quickly located the turian squad on his HUD. They were just around the corner.

Immediately Six activated his armor's active camouflage rendering him invisible to the naked eye. Quickly and silently Jarrood used his mastery in stealth to position himself right behind the unsuspecting turians. They were too busy talking on their comms. Six immediately tapped in to listen. Thanks to the translator he could understand what the turians were saying.

\_"The enemy has stopped advancing. Our Mako line seems to be keeping them at bay. That's good for us. It gives us time to complete gathering our forces and launch a counter attack. Gunships are being prepped as we speak. As soon as they're ready we attack and take back our city. Get to the front lines. We march with the Mako's once the gunships begin their attack. These upstarts will not defeat the Hierarchy! We will claim and hold this city until Palaven can send reinforcements."\_

Six immediately relayed what he just heard to his teammates, their

wasn't much time. The turian squad was about to move out, their backs still turned to him. Six unhooked the Tesla cannon from his back and charged the heavy weapon. Once at full power the powerful electric energy inside the cannon flew towards the enemy squad, and impacted with very satisfying results. The blast impacted in the center of the group, the electrical energy engulfing the whole squad instantly killing two and dealing massive shocks to the other four. Two more died from the electricity's lingering effect. The bodies of the other two turians were charred and smoky, but they were alive. This quickly changed when Six put a bullet in their heads, their kinetic barriers having been totally destroyed.

Carter and the rest of Noble caught up with Six.

"Nice job Six. Let's get a move on Noble we don't have much time," said Carter.

"I hope those Commandos are worth something. Who are they anyway," said Emile.

Kat answered, "You should know them. It's **Delta Squad**."

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Gothis Capital City Outskirts<strong>

**Main Air Base**

Delta Squad had just been dropped off by their own Manta Flyer from their Manta Sub/Frigate. They were an elite Clone Commando Squad of the Clone-Joint Species Army of the OSA. Some said they were even the best. Delta was made up of four individuals, **RC-1138** also known as **Delta-38** or by his nickname **Boss**, **RC-1140** also known as **Delta-40** or by his nickname **Fixer**, **RC-1207** also known as **Delta-07** or by his nickname **Sev**, and **RC-1262** also known as **Delta-62** or by his nickname **Scorch**.

Each member played a specific role on the squad and was equipped with a certain weapon. The favorite weapon of the clone commandos was the **DC-17m Interchangeable Weapon System** (**DC-17m ICWS**), a configurable combat weapons system capable of fulfilling multiple combat roles due to its ability to reconfigure into either a standard blaster assault rifle, a compact sniper rifle, or an anti-armor grenade launcher, depending upon the needs of the user.

Boss was the leader of Delta Squad and served as their sergeant. He utilized the DC-17m blaster assault rifle attachment and two DC-15s side arm blasters.

Fixer was the squad's hacker and tech expert, as well as the second in command. He also utilized the assault rifle attachment but only used one DC-15.

Sev served as the unit's star sniper, so obviously he utilized the DC-17m sniper rifle attachment and one DC-15s side arm blaster.

Scorch served as the unit's demolition and explosives expert. He used the DC-17m anti-armor grenade attachment and one DC-15s side arm blaster.

Though they all occasionally used the assault rifle attachment, they preferred to use their individual preferred attachments. Which they were now using. Boss had just been contacted by Noble 1 and the squad was listening in.

\_"Delta-38, I've got new Intel for you. Your target is a turian air base, more specifically the main hangar where they prep and keep their gunships. We've received Intel that suggests that the turians are prepping their gunships for an airstrike on our Death Watch friends before they continue their attack. Your job is to neutralize those gunships before they can take off by any means necessary."\_

"Roger that Noble 1. Consider the enemy's air assets gone," replied Boss. Delta Squad and Noble Team had worked together on co-opt missions before.

\_"Hey Delta we'll try not to beat you to badly this time," came the voice of Emile.\_

"Oh really. Just you wait Emile, this time Delta's gonna make Noble look second-rate," Sev said right back.

\_"If you ever manage that I'll hang up me rifle," said Jun over the line.\_

\_"Cut the banter guys we've got work to do and little time to do it in. Good luck Delta, Noble out," said Carter before his hologram deactivated.\_

"All right Delta if you all want to beat those Spartans this time we got to double time it. Move out!"

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Gothis Capital City<strong>

\*\*Noble Team\*\*

Noble Team was currently traveling as fast as they could under Active Camouflage. They had so far been able to avoid detection. But the streets were starting to get crowded with turian soldiers. They were getting close. Kat identified a supply depot that they could regroup in and plan their next move. Motion trackers and thermal detection showed that the depot was currently empty. Kat activated a holo-projector showing the layout of the city.

"We're here, she pointed to the depot they were currently in. Our target is here about two blocks away," she pointed at the hologram of the turian tanks they were targeting.

"We won't be able to reach those tanks like this. The streets are crawling with turians and we're pretty close to their front line," said Jun.

"Well bring them on. I prefer a straight up fight to all this sneaking around," replied Emile.

We'd get overrun pretty quickly. And we don't have the firepower to

blast ourselves out," said Jorge.

"If I can get to the top of this building here I should be able to see the tank line. I'll use the designator to designate the target. The missiles fire destroying the tanks. Then the Mando's charge and Emile gets to have all the fun he wants," said Kat.

"And how are you going to get up there, the stairs," said Emile sarcastically.

Kat just pointed to her cybernetic arm.

During the Human-Covenant War Kat lost her right arm in the **\*\*Battle of Fumirole\*\***. She could have gotten a new flash cloned arm but she refused and got a prosthetic one instead so she could quickly get back in the fight. After the Mon Calamari created the Manta Sub/Frigate from the old **\*\*Young Justice \*\***\_show their scientists and engineers also created a new cybernetic arm for her. It was based on the arm Lex Luthor gave to Arsenal. It featured a missile launcher, a grapple, and a powerful laser activated through cylinders inserted in the red ports on the arm. While the technology for prosthetic body parts had come a long way Kat's arm wouldn't fool anyone into thinking it was real flesh. But it was undoubtedly stronger and more versatile than most military prosthetic's.

So Kat activated her active camouflage again and snuck her way to the base of the large building, which was actually an apartment complex. She pointed her cybernetic arm into the air pressing one of the three red ports, the metal hand lowered and a grapple shot out. Kat quickly rose through the air to the top of the building.

Once at the top Kat walked to the ledge and looked out and down at the column of turian tanks. They were almost ready move, but they wouldn't get the chance. Kat took out the H-295 Target Designator, pointed it at the tanks, and pushed the button. The acquired coordinates were then sent back to the missile platform back under the lake.

\_"Sierra B320 to platform, sending you targeting coordinates."

\_

\_"Copy B320, stand by. Missiles away."\_

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Gothis Capital City<strong>

**\*\*Turian Air Base\*\***

Determined to win the unsaid contest Delta took off towards their objective. For a city on high alert the sector they were in was pretty empty. Boss didn't know whether they were all at the front line or not, but the sight of no enemy's made him uneasy.

As they rounded another corner and ducked into an alley Sev saw a small spherical drone fly just over the buildings on the other side of the street. It was the recon droid he had released earlier. The droid sped over to the squad, stopping right in front of Boss. As it hovered a few feet off the ground, the small droid shone a hologram in front of the sergeant. The hologram was a layout of the hangar

they were targeting and the surrounding area.

"Ok lets see what we're up against, said Boss. Looks like they pulled all their people back to the base, that why we haven't seen anyone yet. Plenty of barricades, a couple of defense turrets, and about maybe two hundred turians."

Scorch spoke up. "Just the four of us against two hundred bird heads. We've faced worse," joking and being serious at the same time.

"Those turrets are going to be a real problem though, said Boss. Good thing that the only one's we have to worry about are these two that are positioned on the east security wall. That's where we'll make our entrance. We need to take them out first and fast."

"Good thing I've got the answer to that problem right here," Scorch said as he pulled out and patted a \*\*Wookiee Guided Rocket Launcher\*\*. The gigantic weapon was created by the Master Wookiee Crafters on Kashyyyk. It used guided warhead-tipped rockets and could hold five rockets at a time. The rockets could either be "dumb"-fired or locked onto a target.

"You still carry that thing," said Sev in fake mockery. It was common for him and Scorch to have verbal sparring matches, playfully maintaining a brotherly relationship of back-and-forth teasing and friendly rivalry.

"Laugh it up all you want brother, but there are a lot of problem that can be solved with a good old rocket."

"Cut it out you two, said Boss. " We've still got a job to do and we're running out of time just talking here. Scorch you take that rocket launcher onto the roofs with Sev. Destroy one of the turrets one the west wall while Sev snipes the gunner on the other. Once that's done I'll blow us a hole in the wall and you can meet us on the other side. From there we'll have to fight our way through open ground to the hangar."

"Sounds great," said Fixer.

"Let move Delta, times a wasting."

With a plan formed the team set off to get into position. Sev and Scorch went to the end of the alley where there was a ladder. As they climbed up onto the roofs Boss and Fixer got into a truck that Fixer had hot wired and drove off. After about a quarter of mile they could finally see the base. It looked just like any other typical military base Boss had seen. Surrounded by fences and walls, sentries walking on the catwalk on the walls, a barracks, a vehicle depot, and the hangar where the gunships they were targeting were being prepped.

Boss could see that the sentries had spotted the truck he and Fixer were in when he heard an alarm go off across the base and they rushed to the turrets. The turians turned the turrets to fire at the intruding vehicle, but out of nowhere a rocket flew into one turret, destroying it and its operator. A blaster bolt from a sniper then impacted the other turian right in the head killing him instantly.

Boss didn't even have to look to know that it was Sev and Scorch. Besides he needed to keep his eye's on the road.

"We're getting awfully close Boss," Fixer spoke up as Boss kept driving closer and closer to the west wall.

Boss just said, "Wait for it," and kept on driving.

They got even closer to the wall and now Fixer was really getting nervous as he called again, "Boss!" Boss just took out two thermal detonators, put them on the dashboard, and just kept driving. As it looked like they were going to full on crash into the wall Fixer called out one final time "BOSS!"

At what must have been the last minute Boss threw something heavy down on the gas pedal and shouted "OUT" and then flung himself out the speeding vehicle and proceeded into a roll to lessen the impact of his landing. Fixer followed right behind him. About five seconds later the truck crashed full on into the wall. The vehicle exploded in a fiery blaze creating a noticeable dent. However, it was the thermal detonators that really did the trick. The fusion reaction combined with the intense heat brought the wall crumbling down, created a huge gap for Delta to slip through.

"HAS YOUR BRAIN MELTED BOSS?! YOU COULD HAVE KILLED US BOTH!"

"Cut the yakking Fixer, it worked didn't it. Now let's go. We're going to have company real quick."

Boss proved to be right. Not even ten seconds after he and Fixer had entered the grounds of the base they came under heavy fire. Turians came running towards them in droves. All firing their rifles full blaze. Boss and Fixer were stuck out in the open and their shields would only hold for so long. Both Boss and Fixer fired their DC-17m's in blaster assault rifle mode. The turians kinetic barriers did nothing to stop the blaster bolts as they went down with one good shot to the head or two to three shots in the chest area. But this did little to turn the tide. At most it just slowed the horde of angry turians down a little.

Suddenly Boss felt something hit his already tested shields taking them down to 15%. He looked up at where he guessed the shot originated and spotted to snipers on a fire escape. But before either of them could fire another shot and probably finish Boss off they both got a blaster bolt to the head. Boss knew that Sev had once again saved his life.

Turians were still closing in on them and an alarm rang in his helmet telling him that his shields had just failed. Fixer saved both their asses by throwing down a bubble shield. Boss let out a small sigh of relief as he was surrounded by the blue shield. The fire from the turians was having no effect, but Boss and Fixer were able to return fire from the inside since the bubble shield had been upgraded since the Human-Covenant War.

Boss analyzed the situation. His shields had recharged and he and Fixer were safe behind a bubble shield. But the shield wouldn't last forever, Scorch and Sev had yet to reach them, and despite their best efforts the turians were slowly encircling them. All in all, their

situation was not good. Delta Squad had never failed a mission, and Boss was determined that this would not be the first. But he still would need a miracle.

A miracle was delivered in the form of a grenade blowing up five turians. Boss turned and was overjoyed to see Scorch holding his DC-17m in its anti-armor mode, smoking from the grenade that was just fired. As the turians turned their attention to Scorch Boss heard a whining sound, like something was powering up. He didn't recognize it but the turians did and they smiled; soon their looks of triumph turned into looks of shock and horror as they were bumped full of high-powered Mass Accelerator rounds. Looking around Boss quickly saw that Sev was operating one of the turians mounted turrets and firing it at the soldiers it was supposed to protect.

The turians scrambled trying to find cover but there wasn't any; they were out in the open with nowhere to go. They almost didn't notice that the bubble shield had broken at last. Scorch quickly threw what must have been every thermal detonator he had into the mob of turians. The result of lots of nuclear fusion explosives going off at the same time not only turned a lot of turians to ashes but also created a smoke cloud.

"COME ON LETS GO, USE THE SMOKE," shouted Boss.

Using the smoke as cover Boss, Fixer, and Scorch bolted towards the hangar. They had used up to much time all ready. Sev continued firing into the smoke cloud until the turret emptied and then changing his sniper rifle into an assault rifle hurried after his brothers.

They managed to make it behind some crates next to one of the hangars side doors. Shots were fired at them as the smoke finally cleared.

"Scorch, get to work on that door. We'll cover you."

Scorch went to work applying thermal detonator tape to the door while Boss and the other provided cover fire. Their initial assault had taken a toll on the turians forces. Two hundred soldiers had been cut down by seventy. But the turians still greatly outnumbered Delta Squad. And the constant barrage of mass effect slugs was tearing up their cover.

Scorch bellowed, "Fire in the hole."

They all braced themselves and five seconds later there was a "BOOM" and the side door was blown to pieces.

"Every body in, said Boss. Scorch you do whatever you have to do and quick. Fixer and I will hold the exit, Sev you cover Scorch."

Scorch looked around as they set to their tasks. Luckily he wasn't under fire just yet because they had entered behind a lot of crates. Rearing around the corner Scorch could see rows of gunships (about 20 in all) being prepped for take off. And it looked like they were just about ready. He could hear shouts of conversation.

\_"I heard an explosion. Has the enemy reached the base?\_"

\_"I don't know, but if they have that doesn't spell good for us?"

—  
\_ "We haven't lost Gothis yet. The gunships are ready for launch. Open the hangar doors and then we'll show them why you don't mess with the Hierarchy.\_

Scorch took this all in and turned to Fix. " We've got to move now those gunships are about to take off. Take my rocket launcher, it's fully loaded, fire on the support beams while I shot those fuel canisters. If we're lucky this whole place will come down and blow. Mission accomplished."

"Yeah if we don't get berried ourselves."

"Sev, have a little faith will you. I've got an exit plan." Scorch then changed his anti armor rifle back into an assault rifle and pulled out a large detonation pack. He set it for thirty seconds.

"Start shouting as soon as shots are fired." And then he threw the pack at the farthest right wall were it impacted dead center in front of some turian engineers. The pack activated and started counting down.

"NOW." Scorch leaped out of cover and fired his DC-17m Assault Rifle right at the turians closets to the bomb. Gunning them down before they could even draw their pistols. With quick reflexes from years of training and experience he then turned and blasted a stack of fuel canisters, causing an explosion and killing four turians. Scorch ducked into cover behind a gunship as the remaining turians composed themselves and fired at him.

Sev got in on the action and fired a rocket at the left side support column nearest to the hangar doors. The column blew in half. Some turians managed to fire at him before they were forced into cover or killed by Scorch's suppressing fire. Between the two Sev managed to destroy two more columns causing half the hangar's ceiling to break and drop, blocking the hangar doors and keeping any gunships from taking off. Scorch had destroyed most of the fuel canisters, set fire to the hangar, and killed most of the turians.

Another explosion went off and the heat was starting to become unbearable. "Scorch we got to get out of here. The whole place is coming down." Just then the detonation pack Scorch had set went off and blew a big hole in the right wall of the hangar. This also caused the building to become even more unstable.

"Sev get in here." Turning, Sev saw that Scorch had commandeered a turian gunship for them to escape in. Now his plan became clear.

Sev was suddenly grabbed by two pairs of arms. He saw their armor and knew they were Boss and Fixer. "Scorch what are doing standing around? We got to go," said Boss as he and Fixer carried him into the gunship.

As everything started to really collapse the gunship rose from its stationary position and flew out through the wall just as the hangar came crashing down, causing a big explosion and destroying everything in sight.



"YEAH! We did it boys, said Scorch. Do you think we beat Noble team this time. Before Boss could answer a voice came over the comm. that had apparently been listening...

\_"Think again Delta Squad. Look for the smoke."\_

They recognized the voice of Kat-B320 and looked out the cockpit. In the distance they could see a large trail of smoke. Noble had managed to complete their objective about five minutes before them. The Spartans had beaten them again.

\_"Better luck next time Delta Squad."\_

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Gothis<strong>

\*\*Capital City\*\*

The turians were in complete disarray. After the Mako's were destroyed their carefully set up lines were knocked down from the shockwave, and some began to disperse. Seeing the enemy's vulnerability through his electrobinoculars, Jango ordered the attack to continue. Neo-Crusaders rushed forward firing their rifles, taking the enemy by surprise and cutting down any and all in their path. Some wielded vibroswords and got in close and sliced and stabbed the turians to death.

As the start of the assault ended turian snipers and shock troopers appeared of the roofs and in the mid level windows of the buildings. They pored down heavy fire into the streets trying to thin out the huge Mandalorian mass of troops. The assault rifles of the shock troopers was largely inaccurate from their height, but the snipers were able to take out a few Crusaders. However, the Nite Owls (Death Watch's Super Commandos) came flying to their brethren's aid. Some flew to the rooftops dealing with the snipers, other dissented to battle the turian shock troopers. A common mistake was that Super Commandos and Shock Troopers were to different entities. However Super Commandos were actually Mandalorians who wore a variant type of armor called Shock Trooper Armor.

Jango Fett was currently flying to his target, slowly closing in. A squad of twelve turians had been causing some trouble for the east flank and he was the closest flyer around. The Basilisk War Droids hadn't made it that far yet. It was have been foolish to go alone but Jango was worth about twelve men by himself. As he came around the last corner he witnessed a Blue Neo-Crusader get cut down by rifle fire, but no without taking one of the turians with him to the grave.

There were three tuians lined up in the blown out window. Jango knew that he had the element of surprise and he capitalized on it. Coming virtually out of nowhere using his jetpack to increase his speed he landed a flying kick at the turian to the right. He aimed a kick into the back of the turian in the center, sending him falling to death. Out of the corner of his visor Jango saw the third turian draw a knife and attempt to strike him with a downward slash. Jango shifted his weight on his heels and jerked his body to the side avoiding the blow. Jango then proceeded to grab the turians throat and use it as leverage to flip over its back. Still holding on to the appendage

Jango put his opponent into a head lock and snapped the turians neck. Looking up after dispatching his opponent Jango saw that the turian he had kicked upon entry had regained himself and was drawing his pistol. Jango however was faster, and quicker than you could see he had his own pistol drawn at level and shot the turian dead in the head.

Sounds of running feet came from the hallway behind the door that was the exit to the room. The remaining turians were coming to him. "Well makes thing easier for me" Jango thought to himself. Drawing his second pistol Jango waited for his enemies to come. And come they did.

The door was busted open and five turians rushed in rifles raised. Only to be meet with a quick death as Jango launched a barrage of blaster bolts from his pistols. Each bolt stuck a different turian at least twice. In no less than five seconds they were all dead. Jango checked his HUD and saw that his last targets were hiding just outside the door hoping to ambush him. Well he would have to disappoint. Getting a thermal detonator from this utility belt Jango powerful enough to destroy the foundation of the building. Usually the time for a thermal blast that powerful would need a five minute charge, but Jango had costume made this grenade to wield that kind of power in five seconds.

He set it, threw it and then took off like the devil himself. When the detonator exploded he was still close enough to feel it. As he looked back he saw half the building destroyed, with the top half crashing onto the street creating a giant roadblock. Jango was broken out of the moment by his communicator.

\_"Major sir. The UNSC entered the battle thirty minutes ago from Delta Squad's last position. The turians thwarted and most have laid down their arms. All that remains is to search for those that have gone into hiding. We've won sir, the day is ours."\_

Excellent! Meet with the UNSC and set up a FOB (Forward Operating Base) in the center of the city. I want anti-air and armor guns set up over the city. And see to it that the men organize the prisoners then send them to the camps."

\_"Copy that sir."\_

Jango reflected upon the day. It had only taken three hours to achieve victory. Though it might still be sometime before the OSA had full control of the planet. In all hindsight, it was a quick victory. "I hope General Grievous had a tougher time then we did. Though that's unlikely. How much trouble come some four eyed pirates be?"

\* \* \*

><p><strong>AN: I'VE FINALLY FINISHED!\*\*

\*\*That's right I'm back everyone. A THOUSAND apologies for how long this took. I meant to have this chapter up earlier but I got caught up with my Summer job, family, and other things. I shall do my best to ensure that the next chapter doesn't take as long.\*\*

\*\*So the Gothis arc is underway. I know you all didn't get to see much of Noble team, but I promise they shall return. \*\*

**\*\*For those of you who wondered about the Mandalorians looking so much like humans, I hope this answered your questions.\*\***

**\*\*What is General Grievous up to? You'll have to read the next chapter to find out. \*\***

**\*\*My poll for adding the Chiss is still up. Please vote.\*\***

**\*\*I'm going go see Pacific Rim this week. I've been waiting since the first commercial for this.\*\***

**\*\*I would like to find a way to add the movie or parts of it to this story if it's any good. If anyone has any ideas how I can do that please contact me or write it in a review.\*\***

## 8. Chapter 8: Retaliation part 2: Torfan

**\*\*A/N: My latest chapter is up. I'm back in school and I've been very busy, so sorry for the delay again. For those of you who haven't already guessed this chapter will contain General Grievous's attack on the Batarian slaver moon of Torfan. Several characters both original and non will appear.\*\***

**\*\*My poll for the Chiss is still up. It will remain up until after first contact is completed. This will not be for several chapters. So please keep voting.\*\***

**\*\*I do not own Halo, Mass Effect, Star Wars, or anything.\*\***

**\* \* \***

**><p><strong>May 28, 26502157\*\***

**\*\*Outside Torfan System\*\***

**\*\*Subjugator-class Heavy Cruiser Malevolence\*\***

At just about the same time the battle of Gothis was being fought, another battle was waiting to get underway on the other side of what was now being called the Relay Arm of the Galaxy.

Many had overlooked that the batarians had attacked Shanxi before the turians and turned their attention towards the latter after they returned. But the High Military Council (HMC) had not forgotten. During their meeting where they discussed how to respond to Shanxi a task force had been assigned under General Grievous to destroy the base the batarians used. That base was located on the moon of Torfan within the wild space the Batarians called the Attican Traverse.

On the bridge of the Malevolence a female Kaleesh named Vera was at her post as the ship's XO. She was currently looking at her data pad that listed the readiness status of all the ships in the task force. There were 32 ships in all, 10 \_Acclamator-class assault ships\_, 13 \_Venator-class Star Destroyers\_, 3 \_Kandosii\_-type dreadnoughts, 2 \_Mandalorian Carriers\_, 2 \_Marathon-class Heavy Cruisers\_, 1 \_UNSC\_ \_Thermopylae-class Super Carrier\_, and of course General Grievous's flagship the \_Malevolence\_. All ships were reporting that they were battle ready.

\_ "Now all I have to do is wait for the General to reach the bridge",  
\_ she thought. No sooner had her train of thought ended did the  
elevator open revealing the very person she was just thinking about.  
Vera heard the clanking sound of his feet walking towards her and his  
heavy labored breathing. She turned around and had to take a step  
back when she ended up face to face with General Grievous himself.  
The General had a very frightening appearance. His claw shaped  
robotic feet, robotic legs and arms; in fact his whole body except  
for his head, throat, and half of his upper torso was robotic. His  
face, horribly burned and scared, was covered by a metal mask that  
resembled the bone masks worn by his people.

Like all Kaleesh she knew what had happened to him and how he had  
gotten like this.

### \_Character Background Begin\_

Grievous was originally born a flesh and blood Kaleesh on their  
homeworld of Kalee named Qymaen jai Sheelal. Kalee was a world torn  
by famine and war. For generations, Kalee had been assaulted without  
respite by a technologically superior insectoid species called the  
\*\*Yam'rii\*\* (referred to by the Kaleesh as the "Huk" or "soulless  
bugs"), who coveted the Kaleesh as slaves. This conflict was known as  
the \*\*Huk War\*\*.

Sheelal had a lot of anger. His father taught him how to weld a rifle  
as an outlet for this anger. He quickly proved himself an excellent  
marksman with a mind as finely honed as any weapon; by eight years of  
age he had already become an expert sniper with more than forty Huk  
kills under his belt. By the age of twenty-two, he had slain so many  
Huk's that the Kaleesh people considered Sheelal a  
demigod.

Sheelal's closest comrade was a female and fellow Kaleesh warrior and  
mercenary Ronderu Iij Kummar. The bond between the two was very  
strong, and they became partners in the war against the Huk. Kummar  
taught Sheelal how to wield a sword, and in turn he introduced her to  
the sniper rifle. Both clad in masks, Kummar with her karabbac skull  
and Sheelal with his mumuu skullâ€"inherited from his father, who had  
died fighting the Hukâ€"became legends, twin demigods blessed by  
their ancestors. Together they mercilessly cut through the Huk  
invaders in countless campaigns.

However, in one engagement on the beaches of Kalee, the two of them  
were separated. Kummar died violently on the Huks' barbed shears, and  
her body vanished into the \*\*Jenuwaa Sea\*\*. Sheelal, unable even to  
retrieve her from the waters, was driven to despair and a horrible  
psychotic depression. Inconsolable, he set off on a dangerous journey  
across the ocean to \*\*Abesmi\*\*, an island-monolith far from the  
mainland. There, he beseeched the gods to raise her from her watery  
grave just so he might see her one final timeâ€"but his prayers went  
unanswered.

Sheelal did what he could to bury his grief. He ended up taking ten  
wives and siring thirty children, but none of them, spouse or child,  
seemed to be able to fill the void Kummar's death had left in him.  
Eventually, he realized that it was his destiny to mourn for her as  
long as he lived. With this realization, Qymaen jai Sheelal cast off  
his old identity, adopting a name more appropriate to a being

destined to grieve forever, and, even more terribly, who was determined that he would not do so alone. He would be Grievous, as well as heart-broken, for the rest of his life. That's how he got his name.

Gathering to his side a group of equally bloodthirsty Kaleesh elite, the \*\* Izvoshra \*\*, and adopting the title of \*\*Khagan \*\* (the supreme military commander of the Kaleesh), Grievous became a warlord and managed to force the Huk from Kalee. But his bitterness did not end with that triumph, and he pushed them further back, storming their colony worlds. His attacks and mass destruction of entire Huk planets, including their homeworld, ensured Kaleesh victory. But at a great cost. The war had left the Kaleesh in poverty, and hundreds of thousands of Kaleesh starved and died.

Then the Kaleesh made first contact with the CIS, the Munn's and the Intergalactic Banking Clan to be exact. The Banking Clan's chairman San Hill made an offer to Grievous. Hill saw Grievous's potential as an IGBC "collections agent", and in exchange for his services, the Banking Clan offered to help Kalee out of poverty. Grievous felt disgust at the notion of being a glorified leg-breaker for a soulless megacorporation, but he understood what the agreement would mean for his people, and besides, there was something in him that needed to keep fightingâ€”if not the Huk, then someone, somewhere. Eventually he agreed.

The IGBC kept its promise, alleviating Kalee's deficit and resuscitating its trade. In exchange, Grievous became an extremely effective enforcer. But he found he missed the comforts of his former lifeâ€”he wanted his old elite, the Izvoshra, but apart from himself, the Banking Clan would not hire Kaleesh. He would have to make do with droids, but, having no confidence in the IGBC's basic battle droids, he demanded more intelligent models to take the place of his elite. Hill consented and began production on the IG-100 MagnaGuards. Grievous, at first, was disgusted with the droids because they were completely mindless. He soon demanded they be reprogrammed to watch him in combat and learn how to fight like his old comrades in his elite Huk-killing team several years before.

During the second year of the war between the CIS and the OSA/Mandalorians, Grievous learns that the Huk weren't completely destroyed after all and had vandalized sacred Kaleesh burial grounds on their colony worlds. This news reawakened his desire to act directly in defense of his people, so he abandoned his contract with the Banking Clan and returned to Kalee to avenge the desecration. San Hill was far from pleased. He considered ordering Grievous's assassination, but he feared the vengeance the Kaleesh would take if he survived. Instead, Hill conspired with the Archduke of Geonosis; they were losing the war and needed a new enforcer to lead their droid armies, and plotted to arrange Grievous' permanent servitude.

On Kalee, Grievous and his Izvoshra boarded his personal shuttle, Martyr. He set off to resume the Huk War, unaware that Hill and Poggle had planted an ion bomb aboard, and rigged Grievous' pilot seat to enable remote-guided ejection. The resulting explosion sent the Martyr plunging into the Jenuwaa Sea. Hill's remote command ejected Grievous from the wreck at the last moment, but all his Izvoshra perished in the crash. His body, hemorrhaging and in

shock, was dragged from the water, and was sent to Geonosis.

Grievous had suffered near-fatal injuries, rendering the body that had survived many battles useless, or so he was told. Planted evidence pointed to a Republic plot. In truth, Grievous once again proved his resilience, and additional injuries had to be added after the crash to make his body as broken as was claimed. Hill planned to once again make Grievous his and the CIS's lead enforcer. But before Grievous could regain consciousness ONI, who had been keeping close tabs on Hill, broke into his lab forcing him to flee leaving Grievous for dead.

ONI explained to Grievous Hill's and the CIS's plot against him and their plans for him. Captured evidence was even provided, including Hill adding additional injuries to Grievous to make his body as broken as was claimed. To say that Grievous was mad and wanted revenge was an understatement. ONI offered to fix him up using the very designs the CIS had planned to use, claiming it would be a terrific irony to use the very weapon they planned to create against them. Grievous agreed to the operation so long as his brain wasn't tampered with. Thanks to the medical advances of the OSA they were able to save his head, throat, and the section of his torso housing his vital organs, though they needed cybernetic support. But the rest of his body was completely cybernetic. Internal implants were placed in his eyes to sharpen his vision and to protect them from the vacuum of space. His transformation was complete, Qymaen jai Sheelal had become General Grievous in form as well as spirit. He was disgusted by his cyborg body, but he knew it was necessary.

After the defeat of the CIS and personally killing San Hill Grievous pledged the Kaleesh to the OSA and continued to serve as a general during the Mandalorian Wars and beyond, using the Malevolence as his personal flagship. He had gained a reputation as a cold and calculating general never showing his enemies any mercy, a brilliant strategist, a master escape artist, and a powerful fighter. Though he was also arrogant and sometimes underestimated his enemies. Plans to continue the Huk War disappeared when the Huk vanished once again. His people built a shrine in his honor as he was now cemented in their belief as a demigod.

Count Dooku personally taught Grievous the ways of the lightsaber, teaching him all the forms. He developed a personalized unorthodox fighting form, involving prolonged lightning-fast flurries and power moves designed to overwhelm his opponents. Each of his six-fingered arms could split lengthwise in two, thus giving Grievous the ability to use four limbs, each armed with a lightsaber. Able to spin these arms in a whirling storm of deadly lacerating light that few could withstand, he could attack with as many as 20 strikes per second, enough to overwhelm most Jedi defenses. He was also able to spin his torso and his wrists in a 360 degree motion at extremely fast speeds continuously, effectively becoming a lightsaber buzz-saw. In addition to this, Grievous had repulsorlifts built into his legs, allowing his feet to double as hands. This would allow him to wield six lightsabers all at once, making him more than a match for most Jedi. He also had a little brain enhancement, improving his equilibrium, allowing him to better employ his new-found agility. The lightsabers he used were from the Dark Jedi he had slain, or from mercenaries who had created and attempted to use their own.

Grievous was a powerful being who you didn't want as your enemy.

\_Character Background End\_

"XO Vera, how go the preparations," asked Grievous in his heavy synthetic voice. "Yes sir, all ships are ready to jump on your mark. We're just waiting for the Prowlers to report back."  
"Excellent."

Five minutes pasted until the holo terminal on the captain's platform lit up signaling they were being contacted. Grievous pressed a button to let the call through. A hologram of a young human who looked of Asian descent appeared. He quickly snapped a solute then addressed the General.

\_"General Sir. Captain Paul Lee of the Prowler UNSC Dark Knight. We have successfully scouted out the Torfan system undetected."\_

"That is excellent news Captain Lee. What is the enemy's current state?"

\_"The system contains four planets. The moon of the second planet in the system is Torfan. The other planets are two gas giants and a giant ice ball. No enemy presence has been detected anywhere but at Torfan. We've performed thorough scans and there are only 40 ships in the system. All of them are over Torfan."\_

Grievous turned his attention to his personal holo-projector where the Torfan system and the enemy fleet were showing. Captain Lee was right. All the ships in the system were orbiting Torfan in a very loose formation. His military eyes and mind could see that while their formation was loose they would almost form up into a single or double blockade line. Their heavier ships in the back with the weaker vessels in the front and to the sides in a possible flanking maneuver. Almost like a chess game.

\_"Sir, I should also note that several private ships arrived at Torfan an hour ago. We hacked their comm systems and have concluded that they belong to several prestigious families in the Hegemony. They're here to talk with the head honcho here over the slave fleet that attempted to attack Shanxi not reporting back. I've just uploaded specs to you."\_

Grievous looked at his data pad as four pictures appeared on the screen. Each was of a Batarian of obvious high position. It would seem that the plan had changed slightly. "You have done well captain. Remove your ship away from the moon from Torfan. We shall commence the attack as planned." The feed was then cut.

"I suppose those are my targets", said a voice a voice.

Grievous and half the bridge crew looked towards the back of the bridge for the source of the voice. The shadows seemed to form in on themselves and took the form of a robed figure. Its voice suggested that it was female. Even as the figure lowered its hood Grievous already knew who the mysterious person was.

"Yes Ventress. There are a few more than planned. I shall have Selene assist you along with a clone squad if you wish."

Asajj Ventress stood at 5'9 ft. (1.8 meters), she was bald, had very pale skin (which was common among her people), and dark blue eyes. She wore the attire of a Jedi Shadow with brown light armor covering her midsection, shoulders, and lower arms; she also had a helmet and a Kama with her two paired lightsabers hanging on her belt (think of Ventress's Darkside Assassin garb combined with her Bounty Hunter uniform). While she was often mistaken for a Rattataki she was actually a Dathomirian, a Female Human-Male Zabrak hybrid species born on **\*\*Dathomir\*\***.

### \_Character Background Begin\_

Originally born to the Nightsisters of Dathomir, Asajj Ventress's mother was forced to give her up to a criminal to protect the clan. The criminal took her to Rattatak where she was raised. However, he was killed from an assault by raiders when she was six. She would have most likely died had it not been for the arrival of a Jedi Knight by the name of Ky Narec. Stranded on Rattatak after his starship crashed, Narec sensed Ventress's strong connection to the Force after she force pushed one of the raiders and, although Narec was cut off from the rest of the Jedi Order, he decided to train Ventress as his Padawan.

Together the duo became heroes to the Rattataki, ending wars, killing and uniting rival armies. But tales and rumors of Ventress's new powers—her ability to move things with her mind and influence the minds of others—concerned the surviving warlords, and under Osika Kirske's leadership, they banded together to kill Ventress and her mentor.

During the attack Ky Narec was gravely injured. Jedi Master Count Dooku arrived along with the Clone Joint Species Army saying that he had picked up Narec's old distress beacon. Dooku took both Ventress and Narec back to Coruscant for medical treatment. Unfortunately Narec died of his wounds three days later. But before he died Narec had Ventress promise him that she would always remember who she was and her oath to protect. Dooku took over her training. It was tuff and she almost succumbed to her grief and gave in to the darkside multiple times. But in the end she remembered her promise and was able to conquer the darkness.

Ventress shaved and tattooed her head in honor of her old master. Her skull was striped with twelve marks, one for each of the twelve warlords she had killed after swearing their deaths. Ventress, now in control of the land once held by the warlords who had murdered her Master, had a castle built on Rattatak, from where she controlled her new kingdom. Ventress kept Narec's lightsaber as a memento of the good times with her mentor.

She now served as a Jedi Shadow and as the ruler of Rattatak. While coming off as cold or demeaning, she could actually be very caring and compassionate when she wanted to be. Ventress took a great deal of pride in her own abilities and accomplishments. She placed particular faith in her formidable lightsaber skills. Under Ky Narec's tutelage Ventress became a master of the Jar'Kai style. While training under Dooku, Ventress began applying her skills in dual-blade combat to Makashi, and began utilizing the paired function of the weapons, demonstrating impressive skill with the saberstaff.



Eventually, her prowess as a duelist allowed her to be able to hold her own against up to three adversaries with little difficulty. Her skills even advanced to the point where she was able to battle and defeat, or at least hold her own against, Jedi Council masters, an accomplishment that few of her contemporaries could match. She was even able to contend with and defeat General Grievous.

Ventress was at times both a simple and complicated person. But she was a fierce warrior and a loyal compatriot.

#### \_Character Background End\_

"Selene will do just fine General." We'll take a stealth fighter down to the moon. I'll pin your data pad when we've entered the main compound. That will be the signal to commence the attack," said Ventress.

Grievous just sighed at being giving orders on his ship.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Hangar<strong>

Down in the massive hangar of the Malevolence, Selene the leader of the Vampire Coven's deadliest warriors the **\*\*Death Dealers\*\*** was cleaning her trademark pair Beretta 92FS's. After Sonja became Queen of the New Coven she had made Selene the head of the Death Dealers, seeing as she was Victor's top warrior for six hundred years. Ventress had already sent her a message telling her about the extra Batarians they had to capture. She liked working with the Jedi Shadow, her stealth skills would make any real vampire proud.

The New Vampire Coven had come far since their time on Earth and being granted a new home out in space. After the creation of the OSA Vampires had been granted a seat in the Senate/Council, established the Coven in high society once more, and had even set up small covens and communities on Earth. While they didn't have a very large armed force compared to other OSA members, their fighters were still a force to be reckoned with.

Just as Selene finished putting her handguns back together her superior hearing and sense of smell told her that Ventress had arrived. "We're all set to go, asked Selene."

"Grievous has given us the all clear. I'll be the pilot if you don't mind, said Ventress pointing to her personal fighter."

The **\*\*\_Ginivex\_-class starfighter\*\***, more commonly known as the **\*\*Fanblade starfighter\*\***, were six starfighters originally constructed by the Genosian Huppla Pasa Tisc Shipwrights Collective, until they were stolen by Union forces for study. Now they were mostly used as the personal starfighters of Asajj Ventress and the Rattataki.

Although originally built for only one person, the Ginivex-class could be opted for a two man crew. Ventress took the pilot's position while Selene got in the gunners seat. With a push of the button the fighter rushed out of the hangar towards Torfan. Currently Ventress had the sail retracted so that the fighter wouldn't give off a lot of

energy output, like it would with the sail open in combat mode. The ion bafflers incorporated into the sublight engines would also hopefully hide them from the Batarians scanners.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Torfan<strong>

The stealth capabilities of the Ginivex performed flawlessly as Selene and Ventress flew right past the fleet over Torfan. They set the ship down on a rocky plateau about a click from the main compound wear their targets were. Once they were out Ventress activated a cloaking field to hide the starfighter from unfriendly eyes.

Using both the force and naturally speed Selene and Ventress made it to a field covered with rocks, from which they could clearly see the Batarian base. A guard wall surrounded the main compound, armory, and barracks, but that wouldn't be a problem. Selene used her natural speed as a Vampire to turn into a blur while Ventress cloaked herself with the force. They managed to scale the wall, pass all the guards, and entered the main compound through the ventilation system without rousing any suspicion. There was a lack of motion sensors in the vents, but Ventress just shrugged it up to a lack of proper security. In no time at all they came to a vent that was right over a conference table were the POW's were. Selene readied a flashbang while Ventress tapped on her wrist-link sending a signal to Grievous that the targets were in sight and to commence the attack.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Space Battle<strong>

As soon as Grievous's data pad received Ventress's signal all ships were commanded to execute the battle plan and jump to FTL. It was to the great surprise of the Torfan fleet when a lone ship just appeared out of nowhere, and not via the system's Relay. An even bigger surprise was the size of the ship. The biggest ship ever recorded or seen was the 2km Asari Dreadnought the Destiny Ascension. But this vessel dwarfed the Destiny Ascension at over 4km. As the pirate fleet formed up to engage the mysterious ship they were confused when it turned and presented its starboard bow to them. Then 28 more ships appeared on radar behind and to the sides of the huge ship, which was now obviously the flagship of an invasion force. As the Batarians were still trying to get a targeting solution from their computers a pink glowing light started to appear on the 4km ship. It grew and grew until it launched towards the pirate fleet in the shape of a huge circle.

The Malevolence's Ion Pulse Cannon hit the Batarian fleet dead on with only a few ships managing to escape the blast. If they could have contacted each other every ship in the pirate fleet would have reported the same thing. All their systems except for life support had been shut down. Barriers and weapons systems were down as well. They were officially dead in space. Capitalizing on the enemies' helplessness the Malevolence open fired. The red laser bolts from the Malevolence's 500 twin turbolaser batteries crashed into and burned right through the Batarian ships, destroying them all with overwhelming firepower.

Only six Batarian frigates managed to escape the Malevolence's Ion

Cannon. Their CO's immediately ordered their crew's to retreat and head for the Relay. But before they got very far slipspace portals opened up behind them, out of which came 2\_ Marathon-class Heavy Cruisers and a\_ \_UNSC\_ Super Carrier\_. Each ship was equipped with two MAC Cannons, and each fired one round for each Batarian ship. They were all destroyed.

The battle plan had been executed perfectly. Once orbital superiority had been gained Grievous ordered Phase 2 to commence. The \_Acclamator's\_ and \_Mandalorian Carriers\_ descended planet side to deploy their troops and armor, while the \_Venator's\_, \_Kandosii\_'s, \_Marathon-class Heavy Cruisers\_, UNSC\_ Super Carrier\_, and the \_Malevolence\_ set up a defensive perimeter around the moon. The Venator's also had all their fighters prepped and ready to provide assistance.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Torfan<strong>

**\*\*Mandalorian Carrier\*\***

A normal Mandalorian Carrier carried hundreds of dropships and fighters. While this one still carried dropships, it did not have any fighters. In the launch bay where there would usually be fighters, there were very large holding cages in their place. Each cage held a fully grown Ithourian Dragon. Now you would normally never hear of a military warship of any species acting like an animal transporter. But some Mandalorian Clans, like Clan Becasa, were different.

Clan Becasa was a well known Mandalorian Clan know for its intense hatred and hostile actions against those that practice slavery. Rumor has it that a member of the clan once walked up to a slaver in a bar and killed him on the spot. The clan was formed after the Mandalorian War by former Sangheili Fleetmaster Itias Becasa and is known for using Ithourian Dragons as war beasts. In honor of them, Itias made their clan symbol of an Ithourian Dragon Skull. Humans, Kel Dor, and Sangheili are the main members of the clan, most wear Shock Trooper armor colored green and yellow with their symbol on the chest. In order to get the Dragons to the battlefield some of their Carriers were converted into animal transports.

From the raptors above former Fleetmaster, founder, and current leader of Clan Becasa Itias Becasa was looking down at his men gearing up for the coming battle and tending to the Dragons. They needed to be fitted with special battle armor and shields to have a chance of surviving. He had faith that the men would survive the coming battle and that the Batarians would be crushed. After the Batarians tried to attack Shanxi had been traced back to Torfan, the OSA High Military Council had contacted him to bring them down along side General Grievous. Slavers in his mind did not deserve to live. He had seen the brutal horror of slavery when he was just a young lad towards the end of the Human-Covenant War. At only 10 years of age he was too young to join the military like many of his species, but after the truth behind the war was revealed he truly saw what hundreds of years of being treated as laborers, cannon fodder, and slaves had reduced the Unggoy, Huragok, and Yanme'e to. Disgusted with himself for thinking them as lesser races he went on a journey of enlightenment to find himself. Years later he came back to known space having found himself again. He made a vow to protect the free

and to destroy those who would take it away. Itias then addressed his men.

"My fellow warriors gather around. We all know why we're here today. We are here because the UNSC asked for our help, and we're the best at what we do. We are here to teach these Batarians what happens when you try to enslave citizens of the OSA. WE ARE HERE TO SHOW THEM THE POWER OF MANDALORE!"

"FOR MANDALORE" the Mandalorian battle cry rang out.

"All riders to your steeds. The rest of you prepare to move out."

In a swift professional manner columns with rows of eight were formed, with one rider and a dragon in the middle of each column. The ship soon landed and the ramp opened. Itias took the lead in front of his men as they marched out. His armor was a combination of Sangheili armor and Mandalorian Shock Trooper armor. They marched onto a barren rocky plain with not even a single tree or a blade of grass. Around him Itias could catch bits of conversation between the troops.

"We don't have any cover out here."

"I know. I don't like it."

Itias didn't like just being out in the open with no cover anymore than his men did. But this was planned for when the attack was planned out. Activating a holo map a 3D digital map of Torfan came up.

"Alright everyone listen up. Fighters will be engaging any enemy air forces. That should clear up the skies for us so we don't have to worry about air strikes. Planetary scans show there are about ten bases and camps on this moon. Simultaneous strikes are being carried out even as we speak. Our target is this compound. Aside from the planetary HQ it's the biggest base on this moon. Intel says it also has the biggest armor bay and refueling station. We take it out and we cut off the Batarians main armor and fuel force. Everyone clear?"

"SIR, YES SIR."

"Then let's move out."

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Torfan<strong>

**\*\*Main Compound\*\***

**\*\*Control Center\*\***

General Marwick was a proud Batarian on the surface. Behind the scenes however, he was one of the biggest names in the criminal underworld. He had spent years capturing new slaves for the Hegemony. For his years of loyal service he was eventually put in command of all operations on Torfan. The Citadel Council knew of Torfan, but since it was located in the Traverse they turned a blind eye to anything that happened usually. Marwick and the Hegemony liked this just fine.

It had been over a week since Commander Banto Kafri had left Torfan on his expedition to search for new resources and slaves for the Hegemony. They had all heard about the unexpected Turian intervention, but their spies in the Turian Hierarchy told them that most of Banto's fleet had managed to enter the relay quickly followed by the turians. The Turians returned minutes later having suffered severe casualties. Several administrators who were heads of prestigious families in the Hegemony that had funded Banto's mission had arrived an hour ago to discuss, or in his mind complain, about what to do next.

Then they came. Ships whose designs and sizes looked like nothing he had never seen before had appeared seemingly out of nowhere. The obvious flagship was bigger than any ship ever recorded. It was that very ship that fired some kind of pulse that disabled the entire fleet before it unleashed hundreds of red bolts of energy destroying the helpless ships. Any ship that survived was quickly destroyed by the rest of the enemy fleet. Now troops were landing on his moon and their long range communications were being jammed. He couldn't get any signal out of the system let alone off the moon.

As everyone was still arguing about what to do no one noticed the vent in the ceiling being removed or the device that dropped from it until it hit the table they were sitting around with a "clang". The next thing Marwick knew there was a big blinding light. He couldn't see anything nor could he hear anything. It was over about as quickly as it started. When he could finally see and hear again he was clenching his head on the floor. Even though he still had a slight headache he could still see what looked like two Asari like aliens standing besides the administrators, which from the looks of it had been knocked out and restrained with some sort of energy cuffs that connected them.

It didn't take even a second for him to put together that the bright light must have been created by a flashbang and that the two Asari like aliens must be a part of the mysterious enemy currently attacking. Somehow they had managed to infiltrate the base and were taking the administrators, and most likely himself, prisoner. Refusing to be the prisoner of a new lesser species he reached for his Omni-tool to activate the CC's alarm, which would alert the whole base.

"Don't even think about it," a feminine voice said warningly.

One of the aliens had spotted him and pointed what looked like a sword made of energy at him. The other saw this and pointed one of its pistols at him as well.

Marwick only looked at them with a burning fury. "Even if you kill me you won't escape. You have no idea who you're messing with. The Hegemony will crush your race into the dirt and take any survivors as slaves to serve us." Marwick then pushed the button on his Omni-tool sounding the alarm before they could stop him. The pistol wielding alien fired her weapon at him but Marwick glowed blue and raised a biotic barrier blocking the bullets. Just as armed guards came busting through the door Marwick caught the aliens off guard with a biotic throw field sending them into the far wall. He then ran past the guards, planning to escape in his private shuttle, yelling "KILL THEM".

\* \* \*

><p><em><strong>"Selene's POV"<strong>\_

Selene was upset. No that was an understatement, she was pissed. Not in hundreds of years had she let her guard down like she just had. Her screw-up had just allowed one of her targets to escape. Now eight armed guards were pointing guns at her preparing to fire and end her life. Even at her top speed she wouldn't be able to completely avoid the barrage of bullets.

The batarians open fired and Selene was ready to race out of the way when Ventress zipped in front of her spinning her lightsabers in circling arcs blocking the mass accelerated projectiles. Selene knew that lightsabers could only block projectiles if their wielders delved deep into the force to increase their speed, reflexes, and blade motions even more than they did when deflecting blaster bolts. It was difficult and many employed force barriers to extra protect themselves. But the batarians wore shocked looks openly on their faces. It was obvious they had never seen anything like this before.

\_"Selene shoot out the lights. We'll be able to take them quickly in the dark," \_Ventress spoke telepathically into Selene's mind.

Selene did just that. Aiming at the ceiling she shot out all the lights blanketing the room in total darkness. The batarians activated flashlights and began to search the room. Selene and Ventress were now in their element and they struck before the batarians took their seventh step.

The first batarian to die got a lightsaber in his gut from behind. He was quickly followed by two other who both had their heads chopped off. The rest of the guards turned and fired at the Ventress, but she had already deactivated her lightsabers and disappeared back into the darkness. Two seconds later she reappeared dispatching two more, one with a gash through his chest and the other cut in half along with his weapon.

Disorganized and now scared shitless the last three were no match for Selene. They were frantically shinning their flashlights around the room trying to spot their assailants. Selene super sped past the lead batarian's field of vision twice before appearing right in his face and grasped his head, snapped his neck and tossed him into the wall for good measure.

His comrade behind him raised his rifle preparing to fire but Selene grasped the rifle and using her superior strength wrenched it from the batarian, slammed the barrel of the weapon into its chest which knocked him into the wall, then delivered a high powered kick to the head, smashing his face in.

The final batarian tried to kill Selene from afar with his shotgun, but once again Selene used her speed to dodge. Spinning on her heels Selene threw a shuriken at the batarian striking it in the chest. The batarian thought its armor had protected him from the sharp round throwing star, but had he looked closer he would have seen a flashing blue light before it exploded leaving only his lower half on the ground in a bloody mess.

"Nice moves there," said Ventress reappearing besides Selene.

"Not so bad yourself," Selene replied before reaching for her commlink.

"This is General Selene to any nearby forces. Ventress and I have captured the Batarian family heads but the head of operations escaped. We are requesting pick up and assistance."

"General Selene this is Echo-519. I've got a squad of Rangers with a company of Clan Becasa behind me. We're about a click out from your position. If you can hold out we should reach you in about 10 minutes give or take."

"Copy Echo-519, we'll hold out as long as we can, Selene out."

After cutting the comm Selene heard running footsteps coming from the hallway outside. Another squad of Batarians was on the way. They must have learned that their first team failed. Once they were insight of the Control Room the area became filled with the sounds of gun fire. Ventress stood in the doorway blocking the accelerated slugs. One Batarian was carrying a grenade launcher and fired at Ventress. Normally Ventress could have caught the grenade and sent it back, but she was still being pressed by rifle fire so she had to rely on her force shield to stop the exploding shrapnel.

While the Batarians were focusing on Ventress Selene primed another explosive shuriken and threw it out into the hall. It impacted on the wall right in the middle of the squad without them noticing. This was a costly mistake as the shuriken exploded taking out half of the opposing squad, including the one wielding the grenade launcher.

After shooting a batarian whose shields had been taken out by the explosion Selene hacked the lock and closed the blast doors, locking Ventress and herself inside. They could hear the batarians outside trying to get in and the sounds of more running footsteps. Meaning more were on the way.

It was going to be a long 5-10 minutes.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Torfan<strong>

\*\*UNSC Pelican Echo-519\*\*

Jake Barns, call sign Echo-519, was currently flying towards Agent Ventress and General Selene after receiving their distress call for help. Behind the Pelican he was piloting was a company of Mandalorians from Clan Becasa that were going to secure the base and the surrounding area while the Rangers squad in his troop bay would storm the main building, connect with the VIP's and escort them and the captured POW's back to a Marathon-cruiser in orbit.

Jake thought about what he knew about the Rangers. He knew that they were formed after the Covenant Remnant was defeated and the OSA was formed. Although they technically operated under the Army, the

functions very similarly to the marines and ODST's. This meant that they were usually based on UNSC ships. They specialized in atmospheric jumps, were experts in utilizing jetpacks, and were considered some of the best troops the Army had to offer.

Rangers were chosen from the **\*\*N7 program\*\***. After the Human-Covenant War the military higher-ups saw that while their soldiers fought well against the Covenant they needed better and more hardcore training. So the N7 program was born. The "N" designates Special Forces and the "7" refers to the highest level of proficiency. It applies to marines who have graduated from the **\*\*Interplanetary Combatives Training (ICT) program\*\***. Most Rangers and Spartan IV's were chosen from the program usually having achieved rank 7. Rangers also got access to weapons and equipment above normal Marines. Equipment you would usually only get if you were a G.I JOE, a UNION officer, or a Spartan.

Some said that their training was designed to make them as close to a Spartan as a normal human could get. This was made possible after the Brotherhood of Steel on the colony of **\*\*Far Isle\*\*\*\***, **\*\*which was now being nicknamed \*\*Fallout\*\*\*\***, **\*\*was annexed into the Ranger Corps\*\***. **\*\*The Brotherhood's T-51b power armor was redesigned and recreated as the T-54 Knight Paladin Powered Armor. I was now basically a downgraded version of the Spartan's MJOLNIR armor.**

The Ranger squad in the Pelican's troop bay were the legendary K-12 Roughnecks; the Roughnecks only consisted of two teams and were considered the best Rangers in the corp. The K-12 team contained of six members and was lead by Major Henry Varro, nicknamed by his squad **\*\*"Hero"\*\***. Born on Earth in Brooklyn, New York Henry Varro joined the N7 program at the age of 17 after his parents died. He was now one of the most decorated officers in the UNSC.

Varro was loaded out with a M363 Remote Projectile Detonator and a M6H pistol as his sidearms. His main weapon was the Morita Mk I Assault Rifle. The Morita used a firing system similar to a chain gun allowing for more reliable rapid fire. It was also equipped with an under slung grenade launcher.

Lieutenant Otis Hacks, nickname **\*\*"Bugspray"\*\*** was also wielding a Morita Mk I and a M6H pistol.

Sergeant Ratzass was the heavy weapons specialist of the team and was the typical physically buff kind of guy. He was loaded with a Morita Mk III SAW and a twin-barreled Gatling gun.

A Ranger known only as **\*\*"Holy Man"\*\*** was loaded with a Morita Mk III Assault Rifle/Grenade Launcher.

The final members of the team were known as **\*\*"Kharon"\*\*** and **\*\*"Gunfodder"\*\***. They were both loaded with Morita Mk I's, Gunfodder also had a military prosthetic which was equipped with a hidden mini laser cannon.

Varro spoke up. "Alright troopers you know what we got to do. We've got VIP's and captured POW's in this base and their surrounded. We go in, meet up and extract, and blow up anything that tries to stop us. Ooh-rah?" The team all shouted out "OOH-RAH!"

The radio in the troop bay beamed and they listened to Jake



speak.\_"Heads up Rangers the base is in sight. Recon says that the only fast and direct way to our VIP's is through a private hangar connected to the main HQ. I can't land without increasing the chances of being shot down so you're going to have to jump as soon as soon as we're inside. Once you've secured the objective radio me and I'll come pick you up."\_

As the pelican appeared in the sights of the base's sentry's Anti-Air guns open fired trying to shoot the bird down. The pelican activated its acceleration thrusters accelerating the dropship ahead on the AA fire and past the outer defenses. A few guards tried to shoot it down with rockets put they either were absorbed by the shields or missed. The hangar came into sight and with another burst of acceleration the pelican flew right inside.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>K-12 Roughnecks<strong>

"JUMP! JUMP! JUMP, shouted Varro as the Pelican swerved to exit the hangar. The Roughnecks jumped out drawing their weapons and using their jump packs to stabilize their fall. Echo-519 left and Varro knew they would be on their own till pick up.

"Let's move it people. Arrowhead formation. Ratzass and Holy Man up front with me. Bugspray, Kharon and Gunfodder you bring up our flanks. We're going full sprint."

And that's just what they did. The batarians had recovered from the Rangers sudden entrance and sprayed weapons fire at the intruders. K-12's shields took all the damage while they fired back. Varro, Ratzass and Holy Man fired their Morita's into the catwalks above with Holy Man using his rifles underslung grenade launcher to great effect; Bugspray, Kharon and Gunfodder focused on any forces that were on the ground level.

Varro had once seen a video of Spartan-117 and Blue Team charging through a \_CAS-Assault Carrier\_ during the war to rescue Doctor Halsey. He felt that his current situation was just like that, except the team was running through a groundside base instead of a Covenant ship.

The team ran on tracking their targets through a signal beacon on their HUD's. They met opposition at almost every turn but with some heavy rifle fire and a few grenades they plowed right through it. As they turned the corner that led to the corridor right outside the control room they saw about twenty batarians outside the doors. Varro caught a glimpse of an explosive pack before he registered the heavy fire he was under and retreated back around the corner.

"They've got an explosive charge almost ready to blow. We don't have much time. Ratzass and Holy Man you provide covering fire for Gunfodder and me. Gunfodder will defuse the bomb will I provide cover. Move on us once we reach the door. Everybody got that?" They all nodded and Ratzass switched to his twin-barred Gatling gun. "GO".

Varro, Gunfodder, Holy Man and Ratzass popped out of cover with Varro and Gunfodder racing into the Batarians storm of gunfire. They were quickly cut down as the heavy rounds from Ratzass's and Holy Man's

guns tore through their shields and flesh tarring them to pieces. The Batarian setting up the bomb saw this and tried to activate the bomb prematurely. His plan was derailed when Varro pulled out his M363 Remote Projectile Detonator and shot him. The sticky grenade stuck to the Batarian who staggered away from the bomb before Varro pressed the button on the left side of the M363 which remotely detonated the explosive killing the Batarian.

When Gunfodder knelt down next to the bomb he saw it had reached the ten second mark. "Sir there's no time to disarm it. It's going to plow in seven seconds."

"Everybody down," shout Varro as he grabbed Gunfodder and flung both of them away just as the bomb went off. The blast doors were breached and smoke was everywhere. Besides being a little disoriented Varro was completely unharmed.

"Everyone sound off, said Varro." Gunfodder, Ratzass, Holy Man, Kharon and Bugspray all sounded off they were ok. Once that was done Varro got up and turned around to find a gun being pointed right in his helmet covered face by Selene. However once she realized who she was pointing at she lowered her gun.

"Took you long enough to get here Major."

"My apologies Ma'am. We're here to extract you, Master Ventress, and get the prisoners to our cruiser in orbit."

"Then let's get to it Major. We've got four prisoners so four of your men will have to carry them."

Varro assigned Gunfodder, Kharon, Holy Man and Bugspray to each carry a batarian and then opened a comm channel.

\_"Major Varro to Echo-519. We have the objectives secured and need extraction on the double."\_

\_"Roger that Major, there's a landing pad not far from your position. Marking it on your Nav Point. Get your asses over there and I'll pick you up. You better hurry though, command says that enemy reinforcements are in rout to the base, Echo-159 out."\_

After checking their navpoints for the landing pads location they set out. Varro and Ventress were in front, Selene and Ratzass were covering the back, and the others were carrying the POW's in the middle. They didn't meet much resistance along the way, only a few strays that were quickly dealt with.

Echo-159 was waiting for them when they arrived. The K-12 Roughnecks escorted Selene and Ventress to the dropship and dropped the binned prisoners in before the pelican took off back to the fleet with its cargo.

"We still need to capture their leader here," said Selene to Varro.

"Don't worry Ma'am; General Grievous has that under control."

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Torfan<strong>

**\*\*Private Security Office\*\***

General Marwick was very angry and though he would never admit it, he was scared as well. After he escaped from his near-capture he ran to his private office where he had a secret backup security/panic room. He had viewed the strange alien's fight off two squads of his soldiers and watched as they were rescued by a squad of heavily armed and armored alien soldiers, probably Special Forces, and escaped with the administrators. Marwick just knew he was going to be blamed for this whole mess.

He had to get off of Torfan, out of the system, and warn the Hegemony about this new race. Marwick knew that he would most likely lose his general stars but the Hegemony had to be warned. Normally he would do it from here but communications out of the system were still being jammed. So he would have to get to his private shuttle if he had any chance to escape.

Marwick retreated from his panic room and ran to his desk. Out of several drawers he pulled out his personal M-8 Avenger Assault Rifle modified with a spare thermal clip and an extended barrel mod, Kishock Harpoon Sniper Rifle which was equipped with a spare thermal clip mod, and his personal M-3 Predator Heavy Pistol.

After he was done arming himself he looked out the large window that took up the space of an entire wall behind his desk. From here Marwick could see his entire base that was currently under attack. The outer perimeter had been breached and a battalion's worth of alien soldiers was pouring in. About 30-40 were actually flying around over the battle. They were all wielding weapons he had never seen before that seemed to fire red laser bolts and what he guessed was plasma if the burn marks he could see was any indication. Energy weapons were said to be impossible to make according to the Salarians who had spent centuries trying. Not even the Asari who were the oldest known species in the galaxy had ever produced energy weapons. But here was this new race using weapons that the Citadel Council had deemed impossible to make against his soldiers to great effect. Every laser or plasma round that hit one of his soldiers bypassed said soldiers Kinetic Barriers like they weren't even there. This was causing massive casualties and the base was being quickly overrun. And if his eyes weren't deceiving him some of the attackers seemed to be riding on giant ugly beasts that he had never seen. Beasts that seemed to breathe some sort of dark green fumes that quickly immobilized whoever it touched.

He was broken from his stupor as his door made the "beep" sound as it opened and a company of 20 soldiers ran through.

"Sir, we must get you to your shuttle immediately," said the lieutenant in charge of the company.

Marwick turned to acknowledge the lieutenant but as he opened his mouth to speak a loud "Thump" sound was heard. Every one continued to hear a "Thump, Thump, Thump." It was as if someone was walking in the air vents in the ceiling of the office. The whole company was starting to get antsy and they all tightened their grip on their rifles.

"What is thatâ€¦what is that sound," asked Marwick with a hint of fear in his voice as the thumps continued. No one answered him. Six more thumps later and they completely stopped. Marwick started to relax after a few seconds passed and heard nothing.

"Hmmâ€¦ I guess it was nothing after all." What Marwick didn't see was a head appear upside down in the window behind him.

"SIR," the lieutenant's warning came too late. The window burst breaking into a million pieces and threw Marwick right onto the ground where he landed on his face. He turned on his side and looked back to see a most intimidating sight.

Standing on the ledge where his window used to be stood a large imposing mech. It stood at about 2.16 meters (about 7'ft), and its entire body was covered with silver plating and wrapped in a dark grey cloak. It closely resembled a large metal turian except it had more fingers and toes. He also noticed that each finger and toe looked like claws. But what Marwick really noticed were its gold eyes. Those eyes were organic and filled with a burning fire that made him slightly more fearful of the mech or cyborg that was looking down at him menacingly. Marwick didn't know it, but he was staring into the eyes of General Grievous. And that didn't usually bode well for those who were on the wrong side of him.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Grievous's POV<strong>

Grievous looked down on all the shocked and fear filled faces before him. It seemed that his little entrance had accomplished its objective. And now it was time to accomplish his.

"How dare you come here and barge into my office. How dare you even come here with armed forces. Do you have any idea who I am, who you're messing with!? I am General Marwick of the Batarian Hegemony and I will not be threatened by some out of the mud new species and their oversized cheapâ€¦AWEEEE"

Grievous got tired of hearing the pompous Batarian speak and thrust his arm forward in an attempt to grab him. But the Batarian had been just a step quicker than him. Just before Grievous could snag his hand around Marwick's neck he had jumped away with a biotic charge. He reappeared at the back of the company of Batarian soldiers with the lieutenant and two other Batarians at his side. As they fled out the door Grievous heard him shout "KILL HIM."

\_Play:\_ \_Monster by Skillet\_

The soldiers moved to follow their general's orders and surrounded Grievous. But the good general wasn't concerned. All guns in the room open fired at Grievous but he flipped through the air, avoiding the deadly projectiles and landed right in the middle of the Batarians. Activating two lightsabers from his belt Grievous vertically slashed two Batarians cutting right through their armor like a knife through butter and killing them instantly. A left and a right hand strike and two more Batarians fell to the side's and joined their fallen comrades in death. The next to die was picked up by his arm and smashed into the wall by Grievous's left foot before he was slashed across his abdomen. Even though they tried to train their guns on him

Grievous moved to quickly for them to get a bead on him. An underhand slash and another Batarian and his rifle were cut in half. The soldier next to him had his leg grabbed by Grievous's left foot and was thrown right out of the window to his death. Grievous followed this up by cutting through three Batarians with a right hand slash. Another was cut across his torso before Grievous grabbed another Batarian by his helmet with his right foot and slammed him into the wall before cutting him in half. Only eight Batarians were left now. As they tried to get over their fear and collect themselves two were cut down and a third found Grievous's right foot around his throat before he was thrown to the floor and had his head chopped off. Following up on his gathered momentum Grievous cut down two more soldiers with uppercut slashes. Whatever courage the final three Batarians had was destroyed and they tried to run for their lives. The last thing they felt was a lightsaber in the back for two of them and the last one's had splattered by a foot.

Grievous looked at this handy work. As he looked he could only think about how pathetic these Batarian slavers were. \_"I've meet droids who've put up more of a fight."\_ In total it didn't even take three minutes.

\_"All too easy. \_Awhile, time to complete the job." Grievous thought.\_

\_-End: Monster by Skillet-\_

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Marwick's POV<strong>

After escaping being captured for the second time in the same day, Marwick and his three bodyguards rushed down the hall and to his private elevator. The elevator would lead to a secret underground tram way that would take them to Marwick's private shuttle, and then they could hopefully get off world and warn the Hegemony.

The elevator was slow in coming. While waiting Marwick and his guards could hear the carnage that was going on in the room they had just left. They could hear a strange humming sound (Grievous's lightsabers) and the screams of their fellow soldiers; it was as if they were being cut into pieces. Almost as soon as it started it seemed to stop. The silence was unnerving, and when none of the soldiers emerged Marwick began to panic again. One of the guards was panicking openly as he kept pressing the call button as if it would make the elevator come faster.

Just as the silence was starting to reach unbearable levels the doors to his office burst outward and flew off the hinges. Out came the cyborg running on all fours down the hall towards them. Marwick determined to defend himself focused his biotics and launched a warp right at the cyborg's feet. Surprisingly it jumped out of the warp's path just before it hit and made a small hole in the floor; the cyborg was now crawling along the wall continuing towards them. The lieutenant on his left fired a warp of his own into the monster's path. The monster once again dodged and jumped to the opposite wall. Marwick was starting to figure out how this mechanical being worked. And just before it was able to land on the wall Marwick threw the strongest biotic shockwave he could muster. It hit dead on and flung the cyborg back down the hall.

At this point the elevator finally arrived and the group of Batarians poured in. As they descended Marwick started to relax believing that he was safe now. Later on in retrospect he would realize that he should have probably stopped doing that. They had just reached the halfway mark when there was a loud "BUMP" came from the ceiling. Somehow that cyborg had followed them and was now on the roof of the elevator car. Marwick and his guards fired their rifles at the ceiling trying to either hit the damn thing or force it off the car.

Just then the elevator stopped and the frightened Batarians ran out the door. The tram was only a few yards away, so they were all able to board in seconds. Before they took off Marwick looked back and saw the pursuing cyborg jump out of the elevator. Taking out his Kishock Harpoon Sniper Rifle he fired a mass effect propelled harpoon. It missed, but it did buy them enough time to get the tram powering down the line.

Marwick let out a breath of relief. The tram led to a private hangar located in a mountain twenty clicks from the base. From there he could get on his private shuttle and hopefully off of Torfan.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Torfan<strong>

**\*\*Private Hangar\*\***

Marwick was relieved when the tram came to a stop. During the ride he had tried to get into contact with anyone who was still fighting. Nobody seemed to be able to hear him, but he was able to catch bits and pieces of random radio transmissions. What he heard wasn't good. The chain of command had been broken. There was almost no one left fighting, those who were fighting were basically running blind. Marwick knew the battle was lost; he had to get off of Torfan.

Disembarking the tram, Marwick and his guards headed to a pair of heavy blast doors. Typing in the correct security code on his Omni-toll the doors opened and bright spot lights came on to reveal a black Kodiak shuttle. He was safe. He was going to get out of here alive.

Just as he had finished those thoughts the lights turned off cloaking the room in total darkness. The emergency lights came on but the small red lights barely made a difference. Then a very familiar "THUMP" sounded off sending the rooms occupants into renewed fear. \_"No. It couldn't have followed us here," thought Marwick.\_

As they were turning their head in the dark the cyborg appeared hanging from the ceiling like a bat wielding two strange light swords. It leapt at Marwick whose three guards quickly placed themselves between the cyborg and their commanding officer. It was a valiant effort but in the end it was all in vain. The first two were cut in half as they were raising their rifles. The biotic lieutenant glowed blue and tried to trap his mechanical enemy in a stasis field from behind. But Grievous dodged and Marwick was trapped in the field instead. The last thing the lieutenant felt was a lightsaber to the gut as he died.

The stasis field trapping Marwick dispersed, but when it did Marwick was quickly hit hard on the head which caused him to be knocked to the ground where he hit his head again and was knocked out.

Grievous deactivated his lightsabers and stood over his prey. The Batarian had turned out to be a very slippery snake. But he had caught him in the end. Seeing as he had to get the Batarian back to his ship Grievous loaded Marwick into the very shuttle he had been planning to escape in. Once in the air he opened a comm link.

\_"This is General Grievous to all OSA forces. I have captured the enemies head commanding officer. I'm in one of the enemy's shuttles heading back to Malevolence. What is the status of the battle?"\_

The comm was silent for a few seconds before he got a response.

"\_General this is Itias Becasa. The battle is won sir. We are currently running sweep up operations over the moon and will be ready to leave on your order. Also, we recovered quite a number of slaves from different species that are members of the Citadel Council according to the codex me recovered. We are treating them in the hangars of our \_\_Acclamator's\_\_." \_

\_"Excellent. Tell the ship commanders to begin a planetary scan of the moon. Have them launch their ships turbo lasers or missiles at any part that still has life. Then plot a course to FTL back to Coruscant."\_

\_"Roger General, Becasa out."\_

The battle of Torfan had been won. But the OSA would find out the battle for control of Gothis was far from over.

## 9. Chapter 9: The Final Battle of Gothis

**\*\*AN:** Hello to all my fans. Thank you for the wonderful reviews for my last chapter. This chapter will cover the Citadel Council's attempt to retake Gothis and what the OSA decides to do next. There will also be some hints and a mention of future players in this story. **\*\***

**\*\*I do not own Halo, Mass Effect, or any franchise.\*\***

**\* \* \***

**><p><strong>May 29, 26502157\*\***

**\*\*Serpent Nebula\*\***

**\*\*Widow System\*\***

**\*\*Citadel Council Chambers\*\***

On the other side of the galaxy from the OSA lay the Citadel. The Citadel was a giant Space station believed to have been constructed by an extinct alien race known as the Protheans 50,000 years ago. The station was 44.7km in length and 12.8km in diameter. Shaped like a

pentagram, it consists of a central ring 7.2 kilometers in diameter, from which five arms protrude, each 43.6 km long and 330m thick.

Today the Citadel serves as the political, economical, and cultural heart of Citadel Space, the unofficial name given to all systems that fall under the Citadel species' control. Located at the heart of the Mass Relay Network the Citadel is considered by its populace the most important location in the galaxy. The central ring is called the **\*\*Presidium\*\*** and the five arms protruding from it the **\*\*Wards\*\***.

The five "arms" of the Citadel called the Wards, constitute the residential and commercial sectors of the station. Densely populated, housing millions of residents from many galactic species, the Wards are akin to Earth cities such as Hong Kong and Singapore. Numerous skyscrapers rise from the superstructure, sealed against vacuum, as breathable atmosphere is only maintained to a height of approximately 7 meters. The Wards are policed by the **\*\*Citadel Security Services\*\*** (**\*\*C-Sec\*\***), whose offices and custody suites are located in the Lower Wards. A total of 200,000 officers from different species make up C-Sec.

The central ring, or the Presidium, is a massive, park-like complex containing the offices of the various branches of the galactic government, as well as the embassies of all the races represented in the Citadel. There are also shops, restaurants and recreational facilities, serving the wealthy residents who live and work on the station. The Presidium is monitored by a Virtual Intelligence named Avina, and, unlike the Wards which has no artificial day-night cycle, incorporates an artificial 20-hour day schedule: lights are dimmed, and the holographic "sky" darkens, for 6 of the 20 hours, imitating the familiar day-night cycle.

The tower at the center of the Presidium, called the **\*\*Citadel Tower\*\***, houses the Council Chambers and the main traffic control for the station—any ship within a few thousand kilometers comes under the jurisdiction of Citadel Control. The Chambers themselves are not open to the public and access is only granted to officials and those with special clearance. They are beautifully furnished, with cherry trees and fountains, as well as numerous staircases leading up to the central platform where the Council convenes.

Today the Council was convening over matters concerning the Turian Hierarchy. Yesterday a lone Turian frigate had arrived and made an emergency docking at the Citadel. It was the same frigate that had managed to escape the failed attack on Shanxi. The captain of the vessel filed a report to the Council. It stated that the events of the attack went well enough; however his report did fail to mention the real reason for the Hierarchy's attack.

Many had seen the extensive damage the ship had taken. The rumors of what happened spread through the station like wildfire. The News and Media Company's jumped on the bandwagon for the latest story. Although they didn't know for sure what had happened, they were remarkably close in that the Turians had met a new race, attacked them and lost.

The Council was currently going over the captain's report. Had the media got their hands on the report they would have received the



shock of the century. It mentioned the Turian fleet's size and the unidentified race they had attacked and were defeated by. The fact that the Turians had come across a new race wasn't what shocked the Council. What did shock them was the fact that the Turians, who possessed the most powerful fleet in the galaxy, had lost. The report told how advanced this race supposedly was and how they had built large ships that didn't have any element zero as the base material, their weapons that were on the same level as a dreadnought and that the Turians had not brought it forth to the Council.

However the Council was skeptical at the whole report. There was no evidence of what the report said to be true, all they had was the word of a captain and the crew of a single frigate. They found it hard to believe that there was a young race out there that could produce such large ships and destructive weaponry. Some of the ships mentioned in the report were bigger than the *Destiny Ascension* for goodness sake. Building a ship the size that the captain was talking about and the amount of element zero that would be needed to fly it was impossible. The fact that the report also mentioned that there was no element-zero in the ships furthered their doubts. However, that didn't mean that some parts of the report, like there being a battle between the Hierarchy and an unknown race, weren't believable.

To say that Councilor Tevos, the representative of the Asari Republic for the Council, was angry would be putting it mildly. She momentarily forgot that she doubted the report's authenticity and spoke in anger to the Turian Councilor. "Sparatus, can you please explain a few things? Like, why the Hierarchy attacked a new race instead of bringing the matter to us? Or, how a fleet of 185 of the Hierarchy's vessels including two Expeditionary Fleets were moved from their positions without us knowing!?"

Sparatus the Turian Councilor looked at his fellow Councilor with annoyance. "I'm just as much in the dark about this as you are Tevos. But are you saying that you believe this report. I admit that a fleet of this size moving through Citadel Space without us knowing is a cause for concern but the rest of it is just ludicrous. We only have the frigates crew eye-witness accounts and they claim that the ships they faced had no element-zero, which is impossible, especially with the sizes they're describing. As for what the fleet was doing, I would guess that the Hierarchy was upholding Council law and trying to prevent another incident like the Rachni from happening! Am I right Valern?"

Valern the Salarian Councilor stared daggers at Sparatus. He knew all too well about the Rachni since it was Salarian explorers who opened the dormant Mass Relay that unleash them onto the galaxy. "I am well aware of the history of this Council Sparatus. My people helped form this Council and have been here longer than yours; but that doesn't excuse the Hierarchy for not bringing what happened at Relay 314 to our attention first. Any new race discovered is to be reported to the Council so meetings and negotiations can take place. A new race would not know the dangers of opening a dormant Mass Relay. The Turians may have burned xenophobia into this new race's mind forever."

"They probably thought it was something we didn't need to waste our time handling," replied Sparatus. "Regardless of that the report claims that the fleet was dealing with a new race, considering what it also mentions I think this is unlikely."

Valern nodded, he had to agree with Sparatus on that. "Yes I have to agree, the assumption that this is a new race based on ship design alone is blown out of proportion. None of the crew actually saw who was in those ships. Considering cases like this happen every few years its likely terrorists or military deserters," another culprit came into his head. "It might even be the Geth, that would explain how technological advanced they are, we have no idea what they have been doing all this time behind the Veil."

In his mind Sparatus started to plot how the Quarrians would pay for all the Turians who lost their lives if it did turn out to be the Geth. Tevos however had to question Valern's logic at the idea that it could be the Geth. The location mentioned was on the opposite side of the Galaxy from the Perseus Veil and the Geth hadn't been seen outside the veil for over three-hundred years.

But before the Council could debate any further on the matter a damaged Turian frigate appeared through the Widow Relay flying towards the Citadel with all the speed it could muster. Its engines were flickering as if they were struggling to stay on.

Before any of the Councilors could comment on this Executor Pallin, the head of C-Sec, came running up to their podium. "Councilors, that frigate is broadcasting a message on all channels. He then rose his Omni-toll sending the message to the Omni-toll's of the Councilors who played it on internal speakers.

\_This is the **\*\*Long Shot \*\***of the Gothis patrol fleet to all Council forces. Gothis is under attack. I repeat Gothis is under attack. The entire fleet was destroyed in seconds, we only just got away. It's the new race."\_

The message ended after that as the frigate came in to the emergency docks. Several images were however were uploaded to the Council. They were shocked, the ship silhouettes and designs were the same as ships beyond the 314-Relay. It appeared that the report had been right, it had been first contact.

Tevos could only look at Sparatus, a dirty look in her eyes the kind that one that said \_'you brought this upon yourself'\_. "Well it would seem the Hierarchy did indeed attack a new race and in the process have awakened a sleeping giant, and now they're paying the price for it."

"Tevos this is not the time for smug comments. We must send the Citadel fleet to retake Gothis from this enemy. If it's only been a day since the attack began we can still get there in time save the colony!" Sparatus was practically foaming at the mouth in rage.

"Are you insane!" shouted Tevos, obviously not happy with Sparatus' heavy-handed actions against this new race. "This all started because the Hierarchy attacked a new race and now they're doing exactly what the Hierarchy would do. What we should do now is send diplomats in order to negotiate a ceasefire before this goes too far."

Sparatus and Tevos never did see eye-to-eye, and as he gnashed his teeth at the Asari Councilor, his displeasure at her decision was known. "It already went too far when they attacked a Turian colony."

Turians and Asari have always had difficulties when it came to the subject of fighting or war in general. Most Asari like to talk and push for peace and cooperation above all else. While Turians being a mostly militaristic society usually preferred to achieve peace through force most of the time. They were fighters not overly seeking peace speakers like the Asari.

Before Tevos and Sparatus could argue any more Valern spoke up with a surprising declaration. "I agree with Sparatus."

Tevos and Sparatus were shocked right out of their argument after hearing their fellow Councilor vote in sending the Citadel fleet. It was the policy of the Salarian Union to avoid war. And when failing that end the war before it began. It was here that Valern began to explain himself. "We still do not know if this is really a new race Tevos. And if it is a new race we cannot allow another Rachni War, better to stop them now then we can ask for peace later. Besides the frigates message was broadcasted on all channels. That means the entire Citadel heard it. The populace, especially the Turians, will expect appropriate action. We must send the fleet or the Council will look weak and an uprising on the Citadel starts."

Tevos backed down from her position with a solemn look on her face. She hadn't thought of that. But inside she was still upset that not only was she outvoted, but that the Salarian Councilor would side with the Turians instead of their oldest allies the Asari. "I can see what you're saying Valern and you're right. We must send the fleet. And it appears I've be out-voted on my stance, even if this is a new race anyway. But let the record show that I did not support this decision."

After the discussion was over the Turian and Salarian Councilors began getting the Citadel fleet ready to retake Gothis and to teach this mysterious enemy what happens when you mess with a species that is a part of the Citadel Council.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Turian Colony<strong></p>

**\*\*Gothis Orbit\*\***

**\*\*UNSC INFINITY\*\***

**\*\*Main Bridge\*\***

It had been almost a whole day since the OSA had gained orbital superiority over Gothis and began destroying all of the Turian's planetary defenses on the planet. At the beginning of the day the Turians had ruled over Gothis. Now most of them were imprisoned on it. The fighting hadn't been the biggest the OSA had ever faced, but it was still fierce. Despite being vastly outnumbered the Turians were dug in deep and held steadily. It was to be expected from a militaristic species. All that however was earlier in the day. Now the Turians had been pushed back to a few facilities and were on the run. Marines were under orders to seize and acquire any tech or information from the captured bases.

Admiral Thomas Lasky was currently looking over the reports coming in

groundside. The UNSC had gained control over most of the Southern Hemisphere. This included a selection of bases, lookout posts, and refineries. Vehicle and air patrols were scouring for resistance that had managed to escape. The Northern Hemisphere, which consisted of a wood or two and the main city, was controlled by Mandalorian forces.

Their reinforcements had arrived two hours ago. Battlegroup Tsunami as planned had entered the system once Lasky had secured it. This brought his fleet's numbers up to 77, not counting the small Mandalorian fleet. All the marines and vehicles they carried were deployed to the capital city to reinforce the Death Watch.

Lasky had always been a compassionate person. He cared about every life under his command. Whenever he read about a death or saw one of his soldiers die he couldn't help but feel a little responsible. A total of 200 casualties had been taken during this operation, 74 of them had been humans. This was actually a big improvement from the days of the Human-Covenant war.

"Roland is there any sign of approaching ships coming from the Relay or possibly in the system?"

Roland's golden avatar appeared next to Lasky. "Negative Admiral. I'm not detecting any signs of Relay activation and the only Turian ships currently in the system are the one's making up the debris field."

Lasky gained a faraway look on his face. "I thought the Turians would've mobilized to take their colony back by now." As he continued to ponder a thought entered his head. "Roland about how far is the Citadel and the Turian homeworld from Gothis?"

Roland took a few seconds to answer, most likely collecting data on the subject. He then brought up a map of the "Relay side of the Galaxy" as it had been dubbed. "Intel gathered shows that we are here, the Citadel is here, and the Turian homeworld \*\*Palevan\*\* is located here." As Roland spoke three gold dots appeared on the map showing the three locations. "Our intelligence suggests that it's about a three day journey from here to Palevan and 24 hours from here to the Citadel."

Lasky didn't have to ponder very hard about the Turians likely course of action. The frigate that escaped would most likely head to the Citadel to get help from the other council races.

"That gives about another 12 hours to a day at most to prepare. Are all the mines ready?"

"Yes Admiral, they are," answered Roland. HORNET mines had been upgraded since the prewar era. They were nearly undetectable to any form of sensors unless you were specifically looking for them and even then they could still not be found, and now possessed a yield of 60 megatons, twice their pre-war yield of 30 megatons. If they were able to cripple all but the mightiest OSA vessels in a single blast, what chance did the Citadel ships have.

"Admiral, the Sangheili fleet the Fleet of Penance has arrived and are lending Anti-Air defenses and two Scarabs.

Lasky just smiled at the extra help. The Fleet of Penance was created after the war as a symbol of the Sangheili's new friendship with humanity and for expressing their sorrow for their crimes against humanity. The fleet was small at first but increased over time. It now contained thirty five ships, 13 **CCS-class Battlecruisers**, 7 **RCS-class Armored Cruisers**, 6 **SDV-class Heavy Corvette**s, 6 **Sangheili Supercruisers**, and 3 **CAS-class Assault Carriers**.

\* \* \*

<p><strong>Gothis <strong>

**Capital City**

**City Center**

The capital city of Gothis was under total Mandalorian Control. The center had been turned into a makeshift HQ and any surviving resistance had fled into the nearby woods. Basilisk War Droids and their riders were patrolling the city's borders and the sky's. Currently the UNSC's reinforcements were helping to fortify the city as best they could before the Turians returned with help.

Jango Fett was overseeing the fortifications and defense placements. Base Turrets were being set up on four points at the corners of the makeshift HQ, like a square. While armed with its main weapons the **M2002 XP Machine Gun(x4)**, the turrets were also armed with secondary weapons.

One turret was equipped with two MJ LRG Rail Cannons so it could fire its main weapons at enemy troops and aircraft but assault vehicles with the rail guns. The second turret was equipped with a KG Mk 34 Antipersonnel Flame Mortar Launcher. While it shot at vehicles and aircraft using its machine guns the flame projector would blast enemy infantry with fire. The final two were equipped with two Anaconda Surface-to-Air Missile batteries. The machine guns would fire at infantry and vehicles while it would shoot rockets at any enemy aircraft.

The UNSC were also placing LAU-65D/SGM-151's, or Missile Pods, on the roofs of select buildings. Death Watch attributed to the impressive defenses by placing E-Web(15) heavy repeating blaster's at key locations. Jango oversaw all operations while giving out orders.

"No, place those power cells in the back were they'll be less exposed. Hurry up with that ammo. I want those guns fully operational within the hour." These were only a few of his orders. In truth Jango was kind of stressed. Taking Gothis had been too easy. And easy victory's put Jango on edge. He also longed to return home and see his son Boba.

Suddenly a shadow hung over Jango breaking him out of his trance. He saw a **Kom'rk-class** fighter/transport hovering above him. As its wings rotated into an upright position, indicating that it was coming in for a landing, Jango saw the name **Gauntlet** scrolled on its side. He knew who had arrived.

The ramp of the **Gauntlet** lowered and out walked the leader of the

Death Watch \*\*Pre Vizsla \*\*followed by three guards. Vizsla was about "6ft" tall and wore Shock Trooper Armor like everyone else in Death Watch. His suit was painted black and blue and his T-visor helmet was painted with a distinctive yellow trident symbol above his visor, almost like a crown. He also wore a striped light gray cape that displayed his Vizsla clan's marking, the symbol of the Death Watch (Pre Vizsla's look in Clone Wars Season 5). When he stood in front of Jango he removed his helmet revealing he had Caucasian skin, blue eyes, and was bald.

Jango folded his arms across his chest in the traditional Mandalorian salute and gave a little bow before speaking. "General Sir, we weren't expecting your arrival."

"My apologies for the surprise Jango. Admiral Lasky informed me that the Turians will most likely return the day after tomorrow. And they'll be bringing help from that Citadel Council their apart of."

Jango knew this victory had been too easy. "What are your orders Sir?"

"You've done well here Jango. You and your men get some rest. Keep the Basilisk's patrolling the air while the UNSC patrols around the city outskirts. I'm heading over to the city's air base wear I'll take up command. Once the battle starts I'll lead the \*\*Nite Owls\*\* into battle."

"Sir, yes Sir," Jango replied.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Serpent Nebula<strong>

\*\*Widow System\*\*

\*\*Citadel Fleet\*\*

Outside the Citadel, the most powerful fleet known to everyone in Citadel space was gathering to retake the Turian colony Gothis from the unknown hostiles. The Citadel Fleet was made up of 300 vessels, mostly Turian. 250 of those vessels would be heading to Gothis. They were just waiting for replacement ships to arrive before moving out. The fleet going to Gothis was a mix of 28 Asari Cruisers and 2 Dreadnoughts, 30 Salarian Cruisers, and the majority of the fleet were Turian ships numbering at 10 Dreadnoughts, 80 Cruisers, and 100 Frigates. The one leading the fleet that would retake Gothis was decided on the insistence of Councilor Tevos to let Matriarch Lidanya in control.

Lidanya was on-board her Dreadnought "\_Athame\_", she was currently looking over the enemy strengths along with a Turian General and a Salarian STG General. Lidanya was amazed by what this enemy was supposedly capable of; she was worried that the fleet might not come out of this conflict without shedding a lot of blood. She then stopped what she was doing and went over the plan her colleagues had come up with. "All right then, when we arrive at Gothis I will attempt to talk down the enemy and see if this can be resolved peacefully. Failing that, General Aulus (the Turian General) the plan is to keep the enemy ships over Gothis busy while we land Citadel

forces on the ground. General ACE (the Salarian General), the STG's job is to acquire as much information about the unknown species as possible, but that's not all were going to throw at them: the Council has given the fleet fifty of their best SPECTRE's to help us win this fight. I myself have authorized the deployment of Asari Commando teams. Let's just finish this so that it hopefully won't turn into a massacre."

The replacement fleet arrived an hour later. The fleet heading to Gothis gathered their full strength and headed to the Widow Relay, from there it would a hole day before they reached Gothis.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Gothis<strong>

\*\*Captured Turian base\*\*

\*\*(UNSC prison camp)\*\*

When Battlegroup Tsunami arrived at Gothis they brought with them the surviving crews of the Turian ships that were captured from the battle at Shanxi. If peace was eventually established the Turians would no doubt ask for all prisoners and Gothis back. The OSA had no plan in keeping either of them. Better to bring the Turian prisoners to Gothis so both could be handed back altogether.

Any base captured during the attack was turned into a small HQ and prison camp. Pelicans and Phantoms were constantly dropping off Turian prisoners from both Shanxi and other areas of Gothis then lifting off. Parked just beside the base was the UNSC \_Forward Unto Dawn II \_and the Twi'lek \_Dynamic-class freighter\_ the\_ Ebon Hawk\_. All prisoners housed in the base were kept in close proximity to the \_Dawn\_.

Both Rada and Revan got off the Pelican as it landed near the base. They could sense a familiar presence. Emerging from another Pelican was a group of OSA medics and doctors. A young woman with dark brunette hair and blue eyes, wearing a light brown tight and flexible full-body suit with a slight orange tint to it, appeared out of the Pelican as well. She looked around taking in her surroundings then turned her attention to the two Jedi Knights. She smiled and started walking towards them.

For the first time since he had landed Revan removed his mask, revealing a man with fair skin, stubble and dark brown hair and eyes. Smiling back at the woman he walked up to her. They both embraced each other and shared a tender kiss.

"I missed you," she said passionately.

Revan smiled at his beautiful wife. He just wanted to hold her in his arms and bask in her presence, but he knew he couldn't for long and let go of her. She then walked up to Rada Vadam and bowed respectfully.

"Master Vadam it's nice to see you again."

"Bastila Shan," said Rada smiling. "It is a pleasure to see you as well. What are you doing here though?"

"I've come here to offer my assistance the same as you. Besides, I couldn't let my husband have all the fun."

Although inaugurated into the Jedi Order at a young age it was immediately discovered that Bastila was exceptionally gifted and skilled in the rare power of **\*\*Battle Meditation\*\*** and through the Force, she could affect the outcome of a battle by thought alone. Through this power, one side was granted strength and a boost to their morale, in addition that side would be granted perfect coordination and the ability to respond instantly and perfectly to the enemy's every change in formation and strategy. It also caused significant damage to enemy morale and fighting effectiveness thus causing two important shifts in the battle towards the user's favor.

Bastila was also a skilled lightsaber duelist, and wielded a double bladed lightsaber in combat. She had proven to be able to contend with some of the best Masters in the Jedi Order and was a competent Jedi Sentinel.

Rada knew of Bastila's skills and was happy to have her. "Glad to have you aboard for the show. Will you be staying here with us?"

"No I'm afraid I must report back to the \_Infinity\_ where I'll be most useful. In fact there's my ride now," spoke Bastila who turned to look at a Pelican that was getting ready to take off. "Hopefully we will see each other should we win the upcoming battle."

Rada chuckled. "Come on Bastila, with you on our side how can we lose."

Bastila gave a small chuckle at her old friend's comment then walked away. Before she walked aboard her Pelican Revan grabbed her around her waist and pulled her into another kiss. Holding her head softly in his hands he spoke quietly to her.

"Who is watching over our son while his parents are away?"

Bastila smiled at the mention of her beloved baby boy Vaner. "Relax. It wasn't easy but I convinced my mother to watch him while we're gone."

She then broke his embrace, gave him one last kiss, and then boarded the Pelican heading back to the \_Infinity\_.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>UNSC Pelican<strong>

Two Pelicans were flying over the hills in the southlands of Gothis. John-117 was currently in one of those Pelicans and was traveling from another Turian military base that Blue Team had been sent to, to assist the marines in capturing it. It had ended in obvious success, all information within had been gathered and it was now being repurposed. He had spent the last thirty minutes riding in the Pelican to where Blue Team's next target was. It was supposedly the last remaining base left on Gothis.

"So what's the Intel on this base?" asked Will.



"The base we're heading to is supposedly the last base on the planet but it's also the most heavily guarded," said Cortana. "According to what Intel I have, this base is a big part of their R&D department. Our mission is to sneak into the base, cripple their defenses, and then open the doors for the marines to move in."

"Easy enough," said Will. "Especially for the best Spartans in the entire Corp."

The Pelicans descended about a mile away from the base, having picked up missile turrets on radar. Blue Team walked down the ramp and onto the ground. The Pelicans then dropped off two Gauss hogs for them to ride in.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Gothis<strong>

**\*\*Turian Patrol\*\***

A Turian patrol was out on shift to keep an eye out for any possible intruders from the unidentified alien forces. Currently some of the soldiers were arguing about recent events. "I can't believe we're being pushed back by some new race! When's the Hierarchy going to be here and liberate us?"

"Liberate us! Where have you been for the past day? We need the freaking Citadel Fleet! And even then I don't know if we can beat them! I even heard that we're dealing with more than one race!"

The patrol commander had enough and voiced his displeasure. "That's enough! We are TURIANS, the greatest fighting force in the galaxy. We stood against the brutality of the Krogan and we will stand against this new race or races. The Hierarchy will need information and we will provide it. At the end of the day we will fight, we will prevail, and if need be WE WILL DIE FOR THE CAUSE!"

That stopped all arguing as they continued their patrol. None of them saw anything and everything seemed quiet. Then the commander stiffened and fell to the ground. The squad gathered around their fallen leader and saw a bullet hole right in the middle of his head. Before any of them could speak the soldier on the farthest right fell dead with a hole in the back of his head.

"SPREAD OUT," one of the squad yelled. As they rushed to separate a plasma grenade came seemingly out of nowhere and stuck to one of the Turians. He and his buddy tried to pull in off but it was no use. In the end they both were caught in the purple/pink explosion. The last two tried to run away but both were shot in the head and fell to the ground dead.

A Tactical Cloak deactivated revealing Will and out of the shadows of the trees walked out Linda and the rest of Blue Team.

John-117 was loaded with a MA5D Assault Rifle, two M7/Caseless Submachine Guns, and an ARC-920 or "Railgun".

Kelly was equipped with two Type-25 Plasma Rifles and a M45D Tactical Shotgun.

Linda was wielding a F7 M2014 Gauss Rifle and had a M6H Pistol.

Will was wielding a Storm Rifle, two Type-25 Plasma Pistols, and a M41 Rocket Launcher.

Sam held a Morita Mk III Assault Rifle/Grenade Launcher and a Type-52 Plasma Launcher.

Fred was carrying a M739 Light Machine Gun and a Spartan Laser. He was also carrying his two combat knives.

John took the lead. "They'll almost have definitely heard us back at their base. Ok, Kelly, Linda, and I will take one of the Hogs and draw their fire. Once their focused on us Will, Sam, and Fred will drive up in the other Hog and take out the defenses. When their defenses are destroyed we'll deal with any infantry and breach the base. From there we follow our mission parameters. Understood?"

The whole team nodded. "Let's move Spartans."

\* \* \*

<p><strong>Turian R&D Base<strong>

The base had been put into full lockdown since the start of the attack. All defenses were activated and everyone was on high alert. They had lost all communication with the capital city all other bases on the planet. That meant they were the only base that hadn't been captured. With this knowledge the Turians were determined to hold this base until reinforcements arrived.

Outside two automated rocket turrets were on standby waiting for an enemy to show itself. That very thing happened when an M12 Gauss Warthog came into view. Immediately the turrets turned and faced the direction of the vehicle and fired rockets. The Warthog was able to turn and swerve and doge the deadly explosives.

One rocket hit the Warthog dead on and during the Covenant War era that would have been the end of the vehicle. But since **\*\*Requiem\*\*** the M12 Warthog had gone through some retrofits. It was mostly still the same but now possessed more armor with a roof and doors. The Warthog basically now had a closer resemblance to that of the old 21st century Humvee, only lighter and much slimmer. It also possessed shields that were capable of withstanding at least 1 or 2 rockets or a single shot from a Wraith.

Using its speed the Warthog continued speeding down the turrets field of vision while John continued pulled crazy stunts to doge the rockets. Kelly who was manning the Gauss Cannon fired at the turrets knocking their shields out. The turrets were so focused on their target that they didn't acknowledge the second Warthog coming up behind them until it was too late. The Warthog fired its Gauss Cannon and destroyed the turrets taking care of the bases outer defenses.

The Spartans piled out of their vehicles and headed to the front door. "Well done team," said John. "Command this is Sierra 117, our targets outer defenses have been neutralized. The birds are free to land."

\_"Roger, Master Chief. Head into the base and continue your mission. Marines will follow behind and secure the positions behind you."\_

"Copy, Sierra 117 out." Cortana hacked the doors into the base open and downloading the schematics for the building; quickly uploading them to the HUDs of Blue Team. The base was basically built along two long corridors that lead to an elevator that lead 200 feet underground to the main lab.

"Alright, we're going to split into two teams. Kelly, Will, and I will be Team 1 and Sam, Linda, and Fred will be Team 2. Each will take a different corridor and meet up at the elevator for the assault on the labs. Let's move," said John.

\*\*\_"Team 1's POV"\_\_\*\*

John and his team moved slowly down their route checking rooms for any Turians waiting to launch a surprise attack. The first four rooms were empty, while the fifth room held three Mechs that instantly started to engage the Spartans, but a grenade from Kelly quickly took care of them. The Mechs turned out to be a distraction as five Turians suddenly appeared out of several rooms further down the hall and open fired with assault rifles at the Spartans. They were taken by surprise but their shields held up against the attack until they got to cover in separate rooms.

Quickly recovering the Spartans went on the attack. Kelly used her legendary speed to dash out into the hall and pumped one of the Turians full of plasma, his Kinetic shields doing nothing to protect him. Will fired his Storm Rifle while the Turians were still in shock at their comrade's sudden death, cutting down two of them. The last three attempted to band together but it proved useless as John switched to his ARC-920 and after it finished charging fired and killed two Turians, one was turned into a shower of blood and guts by direct impact and the other from the explosion. Kelly fired another burst from her Plasma Rifles killing the last adversary.

Switching back to his assault rifle John continued down the corridor with Kelly and Will right behind him. However, not even ten paces later they were set upon again, this time by a larger group numbering at eleven soldiers. They all open fired at the Spartans with a combination of assault rifles, pistols, and shotguns. A few Carnage shots from the shotguns forced them to take cover in the nearest empty rooms once again. The Turians used this to their advantage by slowly moving up to close in on the Spartans.

But they didn't know that the Spartans had activated the \*\*Promethean Vision \*\*integrated into their visors. This allowed them to see what the Turians were doing and prepare. John switch to his Submachine Guns, Kelly to her shotgun, and Will to his plasma pistols. John then got on his comm link.

"This is 117 to Team 2. We have encountered enemy forces and are currently pinned down. Will be shortly delayed."

John shut the link off without waiting for a reply. The Turians were almost on top of them. Four were close to his door, four were outside Will's, and three were going after Kelly. They obviously believed

that they had the element of surprise, John and his team would just have to prove them wrong.

As soon as the lead Turian rose its foot to bust the door down John felt a surge of adrenaline as blood pumped through his veins and time seemed to slow. He had entered the mode known as **"Spartan Time"**. Once he could see the first Turians he unloaded his SMGs poring a virtual storm of lead at his assailants. Kelly and Will each experienced the feeling of "Spartan Time" and received similar results as Kelly was able to shoot all three of her opponents before they could fire a shot, and Will used his plasma pistols to turn his adversaries into nothing more than charred corpses.

Reloading their weapons and stepping back into the hall John looked over at the bodies of the dead Turians. They put up a decent fight, but their efforts were in vain.

"This was probably the bulk of them for us," said Will.

"Agreed. But keep your eyes and ears open just in case," replied John. "We've got to move. Sam and the others are probably waiting for us."

**\*\*\_ "Team 2's POV" \_\*\***

\_2 minutes ago\_

Sam had gotten John's message but he was really too busy to answer. His team had run into a similar problem. The entire corridor seemed to be filled with Turian soldiers. At least thirty of them had the Spartans pinned down in cover. They were backed up by two turrets that had appeared out of the ceiling. Team 2 had managed to cut down ten of the soldiers but was forced back into cover to avoid getting overwhelmed. Sam knew John and the others were more than capable of taking care of themselves, but he was still a little worried.

"Fred charge up your laser and take out those turrets. Linda and I will provide some cover. Then we finish them off," called out Sam.

"Roger," replied Fred. He switched to his Spartan laser and began charging it. Sam leapt out of cover and fired the under-barreled grenade launcher on his rifle. His HUD calculated the necessary range and yield to detonate. The 35mm grenade detonated and consumed six targets in fire and shrapnel. A few others were affected by the explosion and were sporting a missing limb or just had their shields taken down. Linda fired her Magnum at each of the unshielded Turians, scoring a headshot with each round, and effectively putting the injured ones out of their misery. By this time Fred's Spartan laser had finished charging and he fired the powerful laser at the turrets destroying them with ease. Now there were about nine targets left and Sam intended to finish them off now that they had no heavy support. Switching to his Plasma Launcher he quickly fired all four of the weapons plasma grenade-like bolts at the recovering Turians. Each bolt stuck to a different target before they exploded a few seconds later in a white-blue light. The explosions fed off each other making them bigger, when the smoke cleared only a few Turians remained moaning and whimpering on the ground. Linda gave them a merciful death and fired a bullet into the head of each of the survivors.

Team 2 regrouped, reloaded, and gathered their bearings. Sam switched back to his rifle and addressed the team. "Good work everyone. Let's move it, Team 1 is probably waiting for us."

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Turian R&D Base LV2<strong>

John, Kelly, and Will were waiting for the others to arrive. They had gotten to the meat up point a few minutes ago and were kind of surprised to find that Team 2 had not arrived. While they could go on ahead John said they should wait for the others. A few minutes later Sam, Linda, and Fred arrived apologizing for being late. "What took you guys so long," asked Kelly. "We faced heavier opposition than you guys," said Fred.

John injected Cortana into the bases systems and she activated the elevator. They all managed to squeeze in even though it was a tight fit. Linda then spoke up.

"Seeing as they haven't blown the elevator, they'll most likely have a welcoming party waiting for us."

John then spoke. "Don't worry I have a plan. They'll never see it coming." He then told them said plan.

Will smiled behind his helmet. "That's one mighty good plan. But just in case we run into something big I brought this." He reached around his back and took something out of his armor. Showing it to the rest of the team the device appeared as a metallic ingot with a circular image in the middle. The image was blue and showed a human kneeling and slamming the ground with a blue circle surrounding him. They all recognized it instantly. Anyone who had ever served in the UNSC or had ever used it on the battlefield knew what Will was holding.

"Drop shield, I thought it might come in handy."

\*\*\_"Turian's POV"\_\*\*

All the personal in the labs were mostly civilian scientists and engineers. There were a few soldiers but they only numbered up to ten. Most of the soldiers had been sent up to the ground floor to fight off the invaders. The scientists were trying to come up with some sort of plan of escape but there was nowhere to go. All of the bases surveillance and security cameras had been hacked and turned off so they couldn't see what was going on upstairs.

Private Aeliana was worried. She was the highest ranking officer in the labs and hadn't heard anything from any of her superiors. Turians were supposed to stay disciplined at all times, but her training had never prepared her for this situation. She then noticed that the elevator was coming down without her getting any sort of message first. That wasn't right. Then realization struck her, the aliens were coming.

"Everyone prepare to fight. Cover the door, we're about to have company. Doctor Aetius prepare the neutron purge. Don't look at me like that we must do our duty and make sure nothing here falls into

enemy hands."

One of the doctors was going to argue but relented in the end and activated the purge. The Neutron Purge was a last resort that created lethal levels neutron radiation that would result in an explosion that would take out the entire underground labs. Nothing would remain.

All the soldiers lined up beside her aiming their rifles and shotguns at the elevator doors. The doctors and engineers got out their hidden pistols and joined in, bring the number of combatants up to twenty five. All Turian civilians usually had some form of weapons training. Aeliana watched as the elevator came to a stop. As soon as the doors cracked open they were all prepared to fire, but the doors opened to reveal absolutely nothing but an empty elevator.

Everyone looked at each other in confusion. Aeliana was especially confused. The motion sensors had shown that there were people in the elevator. They should have been rightâ€|

Three odd round grey and three odd green grenades with bumps all over their surface flew out of the top of the elevator and through the doors as everyone in the room threw themselves into whatever cover they could find.

Aeliana managed to duck behind a work bench just before the grenades exploded with tremendous roars of flame, heat and shrapnel. One of her soldiers was simply blown apart, five of the doctors were burned to cinders, and two engineers were shredded by supersonic flying metal fragments.

The surviving seventeen Turians all rose from their cover to see the formally empty elevator now occupied by six towering and hulking armored soldiers. Before Aeliana could fire her M-8 Avenger one of the soldiers had already let out two bursts of fire and two of her soldiers were cut down before they could return fire. She and all the remaining Turians fired at the armored soldiers, but to Aeliana's amazement they sidestepped about half of the projectiles in a blur of super human speed and the rest impacted a glowing shield that surrounded their armor. One of the soldiers wielding some kind of shotgun gutted two more of her men at close range and the last four doctors found themselves turned into target practice by another one of the soldiers who seemed to be wielding a light machine gun.

This left only five Turian soldiers (including her) and four engineers alive. Two of the engineers leaned out of cover and took potshots with their pistols, for all the good it did as the enemy's shields seemed impenetrable. Those same engineers were struck by bursts of blue plasma bolts that instantly killed them. Aeliana fired her rifle nonstop at one of the armored behemoths in her sight and it seemed to bring its shields down. But at that moment her gun had overheated and refused to fire. The very same soldier fired a large under-barreled weapon on his rifle.

The explosion that followed again threw Aeliana to the floor and the world turned black.

\*\*\_"John-117's POV"\_\*\*

Some of the consoles in the room cracked and sparked with electricity

as the smoke from the 35mm Grenade Launcher on Sam's Morita Mk III cleared revealing the mangled corpses of three Turians. The last soldier stood out of cover and fired his rifle on full auto, slowly chipping away at John's shields as he turned and fired his MA5D from his hip, sending three 7.62 NATO rounds through the Turian's head.

"Master Chief, the labs are secured," said Fred as he finished off the last two engineers.

The dead all but littered the floor as John checked his motion and heartbeat trackers. One of the Turians was still alive. Out cold, but alive. It looked like a Turian female, but he couldn't be sure.

"Linda secure this one, we'll take her back to one of the camps. Everyone else spread out and search the labs." He didn't get to say anything else as Cortana suddenly cut him off, she sounded hurried and scared.

"Chief, I'm detecting a radiation build up that's increasing fast. I think this place has been set to blow. Quick, insert me into the systems.

John ran over to the nearest terminal and did just that. A red light appeared and blinked a few times before it blinked green. Cortana had succeeded.

"How much time was left," John asked.

"You don't want to know," was his answer.

They spent some time gathering Intel and weapons for study. Marines joined them after a while saying that they had the rest of the base secured. One of the Marine approached John, no doubt with new orders.

"Master Chief, sir. Admiral Lasky wants your team to escort all surviving Turians from this base to a camp 20 clicks east of here. Once that's done he says head to the capital city and report for duty under the commanding officer.

John nodded and acknowledgment. "Alright Spartans let's get going.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>May 30<strong>\*\*, 2650/2157\*\*

\*\*Citadel Fleet\*\*

\*\*One Mass relay jump from Gothis.\*\*

After a day of travel the Citadel Fleet was almost at their destination. Only one more Relay jump and they'd arrive at Gothis. Matriarch Lidanya was trying to convince General Aulus and General ACE to allow her to communicate with this race before more bloodshed is spilled. Her pleas mostly fell on deaf ears as both the Salarian and Turian wanted to stop the hostile threat before it could spread. But they agreed in the end, though rather reluctantly.

"Matriarch, the probe detects no ships or anything on the other side of the Relay," said the sensors officer, keeping an eye on the radar, "shall I send the STG scouting ship through?"

Lidanya sighed, "Yes tell them to proceed."

\* \* \*

><p><strong>STG Ship<strong>

A Salarian STG pilot began moving the ship to the Relay and as they reached a certain distance, the Relay shot out a blue light onto the ship and propelled them through instantaneously on the other side. When the Salarians made it they were instantly hit by the WASP 60-megaton mine, the force was too much for the ship's kinetic barriers as it was promptly destroyed.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Asari Dreadnought <strong>**Athame**

**CIC**

Lidanya saw the whole thing on the holo screen just before the probe was hit by an EMP. The probe's readings suggested nuclear space mines—something the Council outlawed the use of.

"Order the fleet to gather some asteroids and send them through the Relay."

\* \* \*

><p><strong>UNSC INFINITY<strong>

**Main Bridge**

"Admiral, one of the WASP mines around the Relay was destroyed. I think we're about to have company," said Roland.

The bridge was silent. Lasky knew that everyone was looking to him for strength, and he would not let them down.

"Roland, send a message to every UNSC ship to prepare for battle. Have all Sangheili and Mandalorian ships jump out of system and await my command, just as we planned. Is our little trap ready?"

"Yes Admiral. If all goes well the Council will never see it coming."

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Gothis System Relay<strong>

It had taken ten minutes to gather the required amount of asteroids and send them through the Relay to deal with the mines. Just to be sure Matriarch Lidanya had ordered another probe to be sent through to make sure. It had returned with positive results. She then ordered the fleet head through the Relay.

What the Citadel Fleet didn't know was that the WASP mines were



purposely placed so that if a few detonated the rest could be discovered easily and destroyed. A second field of mines had been placed about 50 km's away from the WASP's. These mines however were antimatter mines. They were dormant, tiny capsules of antimatter without propulsion, more or less undetectable and small enough to slip through most shields. Unlike the WASP's that had been placed these wouldn't explode on contact, these specific mines needed a detonation signal to go off. An ONI Prowler was waiting cloaked in the system to give the signal.

Once the entire Citadel fleet exited the Relay they began propelling forward preparing to jump to FTL. Unknowingly they had crossed into the second mine field and the captain of the Prowler gave the detonation signal. At once huge explosions went off light the blackness of space up in huge white lights. When it was over and the smoke cleared the 250 strong Citadel fleet had been reduced by a hundred ships. Most had been destroyed outright; others were sporting so much damage that they were rendered space junk.

The Athame and the rest of the fleet were unharmed as they were outside the blast zone. Matriarch Lidanya was horrified by the amount of destruction that had just occurred. General Aulus was horrified and furious over the thousands of Turian lives that were just lost and swore that whoever was behind this would pay dearly. All of the destroyed ships had been Frigates and Cruisers. The Asari had lost 8 Cruisers, the Salarians lost 12 of their Cruisers, and the Turians lost 40 Cruisers and 40 Frigates. This left the fleet numbering at 20 Asari Cruisers and 2 Dreadnoughts, 18 Salarian Cruisers, and the Turian ships numbering at 10 Dreadnoughts, 40 Cruisers, and 60 Frigates. All of the destroyed Frigates were reduced to space dust by the mines. The Cruisers fared little better, the biggest pieces were the size of trucks and skycars. In her mind she couldn't help but think she had underestimated the craftiness of this race. She was however more determined to bring an end to this conflict.

Lidanya ordered that a thorough scan be done. When nothing was detected after twenty minutes the remaining fleet jumped to FTL and to Gothis.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>UNSC INFINITY<strong>

**\*\*Main Bridge\*\***

Lasky was waiting of the report from the Relay. He was anxious to know what had happened, though he didn't show it. Roland soon appeared on the holotank close to his chair and gave him the news.

"Admiral, the Aladdin reported that thirty minutes ago a fleet of 250 warships appeared from the Relay. They used asteroids to destroy the WASP mines."

Lasky knew what that many ships likely meant. "I guess they're not here for peace then."

"The Aladdin's captain didn't think so either. The antimatter mines weren't detected, thankfully, and managed to destroy a hundred of the ships."

That at least was good news to Lasky. Battlegroup Dakota combined with Battlegroup Tsunami added up to 77 ships. They were still outnumbered at about 2-1 but the odds were now much better. If he played his cards right they'd be able to hold on long enough to execute the plan.

"Roland give me a line to the rest of the fleet." Roland waved his hand doing as commanded.

\_"Admiral Thomas Lasky to all UNSC ships, battle stations. This is not a drill, I repeat, this is not a drill. We're about to have company people."\_

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Gothis Orbit<strong>

\*\*Asari Dreadnought \_Athame\_\*\*

\*\*CIC\*\*

When the \_Athame \_exited FTL Lidanya and the entire bridge got a good look at the enemy fleet and at Gothis. The ships did not match any known profile and the names of the ships were written in a language she didn't recognize. All the ships were blocky and box-like, unlike the graceful curves and lines that made up her ships. Numbering at 77 ships strong Lidanya couldn't spot a single Frigate in the entire fleet. The smallest ships measured at 535 meters and the biggest ship measured at 5.6 kilometers. Lidanya had to look at the numbers twice, that ship was almost three times bigger than the \_Destiny Ascension\_. She couldn't even imagine the amount of materials it would take to build that monstrosity. Some of the ships even numbered from 2.5 km â€" 4 km. If she was being honest with herself, she was very afraid.

Before she could try to open a connection with the alien ships a cry from General Aulus turned her attention to him. He was looking at Gothis in horror and anger. Turning to look at the planet she saw what he was seeing.

Gothis literally looked as if it was on fire. Huge areas that were once green from orbit appeared as if they covered with molten rock. Some of the fires were still burning. Lidanya didn't know what had happened but this didn't help placate her fears.

Her absence of action would cost her dearly. Despite reluctantly agreeing to let her open dialogues General Aulus ordered all ships to battle. He was obviously blind with rage and wouldn't rest until Gothis was liberated and all the Aliens were dead.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Space Battle<strong>

The \_Infinity \_along with the \_Phoenix-class Battleships, Thermopylae-class Super Carrier, and the Autumn-class heavy cruisers \_were the first ships to open fire, the \_Autumn-class Heavy Cruisers \_fired their triple shot shredder rounds, a combination of 39 MAC rounds spurred towards the Citadel Fleet. Each round from the

\_Infinity, Phoenix-class Battleships, \_and the Super Carrier destroyed a Citadel Cruiser and continued on to destroy the ship behind them. The A\_utumn-Cruisers \_shredder rounds targeted the Citadel's Frigates. However, only one round was enough to destroy the ships, so the second and third rounds continued on to hit other targets. Some were able to dodge out of the way, others were hit full on and had their shields drained. In the end 16 Cruisers, 12 Frigates, and 1 Dreadnought were destroyed. A total of twenty nine ships in one volley. The UNSC followed up with an Ion barrage. Most shots went wild but five Asari Cruisers were disabled.

At this point the Turian Frigates had closed in and fired their Disruptor torpedoes at the UNSC Cruisers and Frigates. The Cruisers managed to destroy most of the torpedoes with their Point-Defense Guns; the Frigates didn't fare so well and about half were hit but their shields held. Then the Citadels Cruisers and Dreadnoughts entered the fray. Most of the Cruisers fired on the UNSC Frigates and four Paris-class Heavy Frigates were destroyed buy concentration fire. The Dreadnoughts aimed for the Battleships and \_Infinity\_ but their shields held strong.

The opposing fleets were now close enough for their respective fighters to engage. The commanders of the Citadel Fleet were shocked to see the hundreds of fighters being deployed from the UNSC Carriers.

In the mists of the chaos, the Citadel fleet deployed shuttles from their ships, even the disabled ones. Ten Frigates lowered themselves into Gothis's atmosphere to land on the colony and deploy armor support.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Gothis <strong>\*\*Ground Side \*\*

Frigates were about the only ships in Citadel Space that could fly in atmosphere and land on planets. They usually only carried one or a few squads or marines for security and groundside duty. These Frigates were carrying armor and large numbers of troop support. Once they had exited the lower atmosphere and entered the cloud line suddenly three bolts of superheated plasma struck one of the Frigates, each shot punched through the hull and gutted the ship before it exploded. Two more Frigates suffered the same fate.

The shots came from the plasma cannon of a Type-38 Anti-Aircraft Cannon nicknamed the "Tyrant." A heavier more powerful version of the Type-27 Anti-Aircraft Cannon, one volley from the plasma cannon would be enough to destroy a UNSC Frigate. So the Citadel Frigates never stood a chance.

Managing to get under the Tyrant's firing arc the seven surviving Frigates continued on towards their landing sites. Six headed north to the main city along with most of the shuttles launched from space. One headed south to deliver its troops and armor to the few forces that had landed there. But fate wasn't on the Frigate's side as it was hit by the Mini MAC of a M510 Siege/Work/Ultra-Heavy Mobile Anti-Aircraft Weapons Platform, also known as the Mammoth. The MAC round got lucky and punched through the hull on the engine room, destroying the engines and the reactor and the ship.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Gothis Ground Side<strong>

**\*\*Capital City\*\***

As predicted the Citadel sent most of their forces to retake the capital city. Between a 100-200 shuttles launched from the Citadel Fleet. About seventy five percent of them headed for Gothis's capital city. When they broke through the lower atmosphere the shuttles occupants could see the full devastation Gothis had suffered. The fires from where the Mandalorian's turbolasers had hit looked even worse than from space. The Asari Commandos, Salarian STGs, Turian soldiers, and even the Council Spectres were shocked at what they were seeing. Most of the Turians had been trained on Gothis cursed the hostiles and swore that they would make them pay.

When the shuttles got within 100,000 kilometers of the city they entered maximum range of the UNSC's Missile Pods. The shuttles were able to see the missiles coming on radar and moved to evade. What they didn't know was that the missiles were locked-on to their targets, so when they missed they corrected their path vector. Ten shuttles found this out the hard way when they went up in smoke before falling to the ground as flaming wrecks.

Special carrier shuttles in the back of the sea of shuttles were carrying M35 Mako tanks. When the pilots saw what was happening up ahead they immediately descended close to the ground to drop their cargo. As the pounding from the missile pods got worse more pilots carrying troops followed their example. The Mako's provided covering fire and support for the advancing forces. When they near the edge of the city they met up with what was left of the Turian resistance on Gothis.

A group of Asari Commandos whose shuttle had been shot down where on their way to rescue a squad of the Turian resistance who had been cut off from the main force and had been engaged by a squad of UNSC Marines and ODS'T's. The Turians were fighting valiantly, but the coordinated fire of the UNSC forces was slowly wearing them down. The Asari Commandoes showed up just as the last five Turians were on their last legs.

The Asari lit up in the blue glow of their biotics as they entered the fight and took the Marines and ODS'T's by surprise. One Asari threw a Warp attack at an ODS'T but his shields protected him from the worst of the deadly attack. When the Commandos saw that their opponents were shielded they fired their rifles to whittle them down and combined their biotic powers. One ODS'T found himself trapped in a Stasis field before it was detonated by a Warp, causing a biotic explosion and ending his life. A Singularity was launched over the Marines. While their shields protected them from the artificial black hole they couldn't protect the Marines from the biotic detonation created by a Shockwave hitting the Singularity, killing two ODS'T's and three Marines. The ODS'T's and Marines tried to fight back but the Asari's biotic Barriers protected them from the barrage of bullets.

A Marine lieutenant noticed that the Asari Commandos fighting style was similar to that of a Jedi. All soldiers in the OSA had had training on how to fight Jedi. The trick was to hit them hard, fast,

and smart. Priming a flashbang the Marine threw it at the nearest Asari. The other UNSC forces saw this and polarized the visors on their helmets. The targeted Asari was so busy trying to breakthrough another ODS'T's shields that she didn't see the grenade until it was too late.

The bright burst of light blinded the Commando causing her to drop her gun and clench her eyes in pain. Seeing this the Marine charged the stunned alien and plunged its combat knife into its head killing the Asari instantly.

The other Commandos were shocked over the sudden death of their fallen sister. Meanwhile the other Marines and ODS'T's saw what had happened and copied their comrade's actions. The results were only half as successful as most of the Asari were able to close their eyes and raise Barriers in time to save themselves. But three Asari suffered death by MA5D's and BR85HB SR's. At this point the Turians rejoined the fight and provided covering fire for the Asari.

Another group of Asari Commandos arrived bringing the cut in half squad back up to eight. This group had seen how the alien soldiers had adapted to their tactics, they knew that these aliens were dangerous and were not about to take chances. Equipping their weapons with \*\*Warp Ammo\*\* they quickly joined the fray, backing up their fellow Commandos.

Half of the Commandos threw Warps and Throw fields at the OSA forces while the other half covered them with Barrier support. The biotic attacks whittled down the OSA's shields allowing the Turians to butcher them with their rifles. This continuous onslaught caused the ODS'T's and Marines to begin to retreat. The ODS'T's tried to cover the Marines falling back as well as retrieve the wounded as their armor was tougher than that of the Marines. But those that managed to get to their fallen comrades were either engulfed in a biotic Pull field before being shot to death, or were blown back by a Shockwave.

Then the Turians and Asari did something that shocked and created anger and hatred in the surviving Marines and ODS'T's, they started to kill the injured. Both of the Citadel aliens' actions were driven by rage. The Turians were angry over the damage done to Gothis and the thousands of their dead comrades, and the Asari were angry over their fallen sisters.

One ODS'T stood above an injured and downed female Marine, defending and guarding her from enemy fire. An Asari performed a Biotic Charge, knocking the ODS'T back and draining his shields some. Before he could regain himself the Asari fired her \*\*Disciple\*\* shotgun at him, his shields protected him from the worst of the shot but the Warp Ammo managed to tear threw his armor wounding him mortally. She then noticed the injured Marine. The Asari was momentarily surprised that the alien looked so much like her that with a few changes it could easily pass for an Asari. Getting her composure back the Commando engulfed her hand in biotic power and raised it to a striking position. She planned to end the Marine's life.

Suddenly the sound of a single gunshot filled the air and the fighting practically stopped as if time itself had stopped. The Asari Commando just stood there with her hand raised as if she had frozen. It soon became apparent what had happened and she then collapsed to the ground with a smoking hole in the middle of her forehead. Several

of the remaining ODST's who had managed to find cover followed the blue vapor trail left behind in the path of the bullet. Their eyes followed the blue trail to where the shot originated and under their helmets their faces lit up in joy.

Standing atop of a large hill overlooking the fight was Jun-A266 holding a F7 M2014 Gauss Rifle, its barrel smoking from the recent shot. The other members of Noble Team came running up the other side of the hill and joined their comrade's side. Needless to say the surviving humans were happy to see them.

The six Spartans had seen the Turians and Asari executing the injured and defenseless. It reminded them all of the many times they had witnessed such a sight during the war with the Covenant and the CIS. At least during the war with the Mandalorians they only killed the critically wounded and put them out of their misery. So, it was an easy call for Carter to give the enemy no quarter. This made Emile really happy as he wouldn't have to watch his fire.

Emile, Kat, and Jarrod raced down the hill ahead of the others. Carter was not far behind and Jun and Jorge stayed behind to provide covering fire.

One of the Commandos put up a Barrier to block the heavy fire from Jorge's machine gun. The weapons heavy fire shock the Barrier and caused the Asari to sweat, but it held. To Noble Team the Asari looked like it had deployed a drop shield, but they knew it was a biotic field created by the Asari. Seeing as he saw that the Asari couldn't move while holding up the Barrier, Jun took aim and fired. The bullet propelled through electromagnetic fields and fired at tremendous speeds just like a Mass Accelerator, and coated with energy, passed right through the Barrier like it wasn't even there; hit the Asari right in the forehead blowing it clean off. The other Asari Commandos were shocked beyond belief that there was weapon was capable of passing through their Barriers.

Jun and Jorge continued to provide the ODST's covering fire, allowing them to carry the wounded out. An Asari looked out of the rock cover the Citadel Forces had taken cover behind and threw a Warp intending to rip an ODST in half. Carter saw this and jumped in front of the attack allowing his shields to take the hit. Using his superior reaction time and aim Carter quickly raised and fired his DC-15S blaster carbine on full automatic gunning down the Asari.

At this point two more Kodiak shuttles flew over carrying reinforcements, obviously attracted by all the biotics and gunfire. Jorge equipped his modified M247H Machine Gun with high-explosive incendiary/armor piercing ammo and fired on one of the shuttles; he scored hits along the sides causing small explosions and fires from the explosive ammunition. When the engines were hit they went up in blew smoke causing the shuttle to spiral out of the air before hitting the ground and going up in blue smoke. The other shuttle managed to unload its occupants, a squad of six Asari Commandos, before sharing its partners fate.

One of the Asari landed near Kat's position who was shot at the Turians cover with her Z-110 Boltshot pistol, and thinking that it had the drop on the Spartan attempted to deliver a powerful biotic punch right through her. Kat however had detected the Commando on her HUD and felt time slowing down registering her "Spartan Time" had

been triggered. She moved like an experienced boxer out of the path of the Asari's punch and switched her pistol for her rifle.

After the capital city had been captured Kat had switched her DC-15S blaster carbine for a new rifle. This rifle was a Mon Calamari Spear Blaster. Designed by the Mon Calamari for underwater use this rifle could still be used out of water. It was the standard issue Mon Calamari weapon; their shape was very different from that of conventional blasters being designed similarly to a conventional or primitive spear with the addition of blaster technology. The weapon could be skillfully manipulated with one hand for both ranged and close range combat; which it was that Kat was doing.

It was a great surprise to the Asari Commando when at one point she was at the back of the Spartan. At the next point she felt a sharp excruciating pain in her chest. Coughing up purple blood she managed to look down and saw the spear end of Kat's rifle impaled in her chest. The Asari coughed up more blood and died as Kat wrenched her spear rifle out of the Commando's chest. Kat's actions had inattentively put her back to the Turians and other Asari leaving her vulnerable. Luckily she had her team watching her back.

Emile charged the cover of the Turians and Asari hid behind. Jarrod followed suit. Emile jumped over the rocks they were using as cover and landed on top of a Turian, whose head was blown off via shotgun round. The Citadel Forces were shocked at the Spartans reckless behavior, having only seen acts like that performed by Krogan. Before they could fire on Emile, Jane decloaked behind an Asari, grabbed its scalp crests, twisted it around and thrust his combat knife under her chin and threw her scalp. Dropping the dead Asari Jarrod took out his Z-250 Lightrifle.

Two Asari glowed blue, reading to use their biotic powers. Emile acted quickly by stabbing one in the neck with his Kukri knife while Jun sniped the other. Jarrod gunned down two Turians with his Lightrifle while he primed a plasma grenade and through it into a group of Asari. One of the female Commando's screamed as it stuck to her, two other Commandos tried to get it off but they both ended up getting caught in the blue and purple explosion.

Absolutely filled with rage over the death of her sister Commandos and the apparent ease that these armored soldiers were disposing them, one of the few remaining Asari charged Emile, her whole body shining in a blue biotic aura with most of it concentrated in her raised fist. Emile gripped his Kukri and charged at her as well. Waiting until practically the last minute when the Asari pulled her arm back to deliver her punch Emile performed a summersault and got behind the Asari. Before she could even register what had happened Emile spun on his heel and thrust his Kukri through the back of the Asari's heap and out through her mouth.

Only two Turians and three Asari remained. After witnessing everything that had happened they wised up and ran away in retreat before they could be gunned down. Jun fired three shots from his Gauss Rifle killing a Turian and two Asari to make them run faster. Emile attempted to chase after them but Carter stepped in front of him raised his M395 DMR and from 40 yards away gunned down the last Turian in two shots. Emile voiced his displeasure at Carter stopping him only to kill the Turian and let the Asari get away. He asked why he did that.

Carter answered, "How many men does it take to deliver a message?"

Emile smiled now knowing that Carter had let the Asari go to spread the tale of what had happened, and fear. He answered "One".

They then preceded to catch up with and escort the survivors back to the HQ.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Gothis Capital City<strong>

**\*\*Edge of Southwest Region\*\***

Elsewhere in the Southwest Region of Gothis a Salarian STG squad lead by a Turian Spectre were moving threw the city on the edge of the battle. Their mission was to gather intelligence on the enemy, sabotage the enemy in any way, and dispose of any prime targets.

They were trying to get to the city center where the aliens had set up their HQ. On the way the squad spotted a small group of Mandalorian Neo-Crusaders. There were four of them, three in blue armor and one Rally Master in crimson armor. Two of the blue Neo-Crusaders were carrying a E-Web(15) heavy repeating blaster, obviously trying to move it closer to the fighting. The Turian Spectre named Lucius saw that the Mandalorians hadn't noticed them and he had an opportunity to kill the aliens quickly and capture the weapon they where haling for study.

Lucius signaled for two of the Salarians carrying sniper rifles to shoot down the aliens. What the squad didn't know was that they weren't as sneaky as they thought they were. They also didn't know that they were only seeing half of the Mandalorian squad. The other half were cloaked and had been spying on the STG since they entered the area. When they saw the Salarian sniper take aim at their brothers they acted. Using the element of surprise a cloaked Jango Fett decloaked and aimed and fired the MM9 missile his JT-12 jetpack was equipped with. The Salarians were momentarily shocked when another alien appeared out of nowhere before regaining their senses and ducked. The missile sailed threw the window of the room they were hiding in and over their heads.

It must have it a gas tank or something explosive as when the missile detonated it caused a bigger explosion than it should have. One poor Salarian flew out the window on fire screaming the whole way down before he splattered on the pavement mercifully ending his life. Jango flew up to the window the missile had gone through. He saw the room on fire and his helmet picked up four life signatures, one was buried under rubble and knocked out, the other three were two critically injured Salarians and one Turian Spectre.

Jango took out one of his blaster pistols and shoot one laser bolt at each of the Salarians heads killing them instantly. At this point the Turian Spectre pointed his Omi-tool at Jango and launched an Overload program at him. To Jango all he saw was a strange hardlight device appear on the Turian's arm so the attack caught him by surprise. The high voltage electricity surged through Jango breaking his shields



and making him take several steps back in pain.

Lucius didn't even bother to draw a weapon, he just lunged at Jango, managed to grab him and sent them both falling out the window. About half way to the ground Jango regained his bearings and activated his jetpack, cushioning their impact and sending the two soldiers flying away from each other.

The Neo-Crusaders all pointed their guns at the Turian Spectre and were ready to end his life when Jango shouted, "NO!" "He's mine." The Mandalorian elite obeyed and gathered around Jango and Lucius in a circle forming a ring. Lucius got the gist that the alien wanted to fight him one on one. We'll that was fine with him. He drew his knife while Jango opted to simply fight the Spectre with his bare hands. Lucius saw this and believing he had the advantage charged.

Had he known anything about Jango he would have been much more cautious. As Lucius swung to thrust his knife through Jango's heart Jango simply grabbed the Turian's wrist and put Lucius in a wristlock twisting it hard. Lucius refused to drop his knife and managed to move his foot behind Jango's left one and tripped him, sending Jango to the ground. As Lucius turned and with a might punch knocked Jango's helmet off. He then raised his knife to deliver the killing blow, but Jango delivered a might kick to the Turian's head sending him back.

This guy was a lot better than the other Turians Jango had fought hand to hand. Coming to this conclusion Jango upped the fight a notch and went on the offensive. He threw a left cross which Lucius blocked and countered with a thrust of his knife. The blade passed through the material of Jango's undersuit and cut shallowly into Jango's side. Through the pain Jango still managed to lock the arm in place under his own arm. The two opponents were now locked in a standstill, which was broken when Jango reared his head back and delivered a strong headbutt to Lucius's forehead and nose.

Lucius went tumbling to the ground dazed, blood pouring from his broken nose. Jango would not give him the time he needed to recover. Using his legs to lockdown Lucius's arms Jango grabbed Lucius by the throat with his left hand and started pounding the Spectre's head in with his right. This continued for thirty seconds, Jango dishing out right crosses to Lucius's temple. When blood started to splatter on his hand and helmet, Jango grabbed Lucius's head and bashed it three times into the ground. When he was finished the Turian's head was turned into a bloody pulp and he moved no more.

During all the commotion the one Salarian STG agent that had survived Jango's earlier attack had climbed out of the rubble and had witnessed the whole fight. Having recorded it on its Omi-tool the battered agent took off back the way he had come. To tell the tale of the alien warrior who had fought and killed one of the Council's top and deadliest Spectre's with his bare hands.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Gothis Capital City<strong>

\*\*OSA HQ (City Center)\*\*

The City Center was a buzz of activity. Mandalorian and Human

soldiers were running around completing some task or another. Medics were treating the wounded. The light to moderately wounded were patched up then sent back into the field. Those who were in bad to critical condition were loaded onto Pelicans to be ships to other Airbase for more extensive treatment.

Inside the makeshift HQ Rada Vadam, Blue Team, and Captain Sarah Palmer were looking at a holographic tactical map of the city. They were coordinating the defense of the city and the HQ with Commanders out in the field. The map showed the location of their forces and the Citadels. It even showed where both sides vehicles were.

"What is the status of the enemy," Rada asked.

It was Spartan-IV Jared Miller onboard \_Infinity\_ that answered through the comm's.

\_"The Citadel forces are committing most of their invasion force to the South-Western defenses.\_ \_We've received reports that the Turian resistance has joined up with them. Our forces soldiers are hold steadfast but could use some reinforcements. Nearly all Citadel reinforcements have been sent to the South-Western area. We shot down about 25% of their dropships, not much armor on them, others landed in deferent areas but no more than two or three dropships apiece. Squads and Spartan Fireteams have been sent to deal with them."\_

At this point the comm's beamed up and in holographic form appeared General Avery Junior Johnson. He was in charge of all UNSC Army and Marine forces taking part in this operation.

\_"Ah, some of my favorite people."\_

"What do you have to report General Johnson," asked Rada.

\_"These\*\* 'Bird\*\* \*\*Men'\*\*, \*\*'Blue Chicks'\*\*, and \*\*'Frogs'\*\* are putting up a decent fight. But we'll make sure to keep on the pressure. Noble 1 of Noble Team reported that they completed their objective and should be at your position with a squad of Marines and ODS's. They have injured with them that are going to need a lift. Here's a real kicker for ya'll. Captain Carter reports that the Turians and those Asari with those biotic powers had begun executing the wounded by the time they got there. Brings back memories that."\_

Everyone knew he was referring to the days of the Human-Covenant War. While most of humanity and former Covenant races had moved past their old hatreds. Johnson always loved reminding people. Said they should never forget.

Getting things back on track Rada spoke up. "What else do you have to report?"

Cortana was the one who answered, her avatar appearing next to the map. "As predicted, the Citadel has sent most of their forces to here to the city. Though a sizable force was sent to the southlands. Only a few bases are under attack but the defenses there can handle them. I'm going to take an obvious wild guess that the Citadel's priority is to first retake the city."

"Very well," said Rada. "I think we have waited long enough. General

we're send some reinforcement over to our forces in the South-Western district. And tell Fireteam Crimson and Noble Team to provide Mantis support. We have to take care of those tanks.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Space Battle<strong>

The fighting groundside was nothing compared to what was going on in space. Ships were dog fighting at medium to point black range. The UNSC had lost six more ships since the fighting had started. Four more \_Paris-class Heavy Frigates\_, one \_Orion-class Battlecruiser\_, and one \_Golem-class Assault Destroyer\_. When Lasky saw how the Citadel ships could fire their main guns more quickly than his could he ordered all of his Frigates to take cover behind the bigger UNSC ships to avoid the heavy salvos as much as possible.

Despite their heavy firing the Citadel was actually fairing worse believe it or not. They had lost an additional 30 ships, including a couple of the ones sent down to Gothis. Twenty Frigates, seven Cruisers, and three Dreadnoughts had been destroyed since the fighting groundside began. This brought their fleet numbers down to 91 ships.

The Citadel's Frigate "wolf pack" flotillas were trying to do their job and bound the few weakened UNSC ships. But trying to do so put them in range of the UNSC's Anti-ship defenses. If the Onagers didn't outright destroy the small ships the turbolasers would bypass the Citadel's Kinetic Barriers and do it. Cruisers on both sides were battering each other and \_Infinity\_, the \_Thermopylae-class Super Carrier\_ **\*\*\_Zeus\_\*\***, and the \_Phoenix-class Battleships\_ were dog fighting with the Citadel's Dreadnoughts while provide screening protection for the Frigates.

Fighting between the factions fighters was a little more even. The UNSC and Citadel one-man ships started off about even in size. But the UNSC's \_GA-TL1 Longswords\_, \_YSS-100 Sabers\_, and \_Broadwords\_ quickly proved their superiority and quickly gained the upper hand. Once the fleets had entered knife fighting range the Citadel pilots tried to lure their UNSC counterparts closer to their ships GARDIAN Lasers. It worked a little but the UNSC caught on quick. The Aerialbots were providing assistance in the fight.

**\*\*"Silverbolt's POV"\*\***

The leader of the Aerialbots Silverbolt was currently in pursuit of a Salarian Fighter with a Turian Interceptor on his six. He performed evasive maneuvers to avoid the Interceptor's fire while still remaining on the tail of the fighter he was chasing.

The pursuing Interceptor locked on to him and fired a Disrupter Torpedo. Quickly he deployed flares which intercepted the missiles path and caused it to explode. Using the cover of the explosion Silverbolt transformed into his Cybertronian form (which looked like a cross between a 21st Century Space Shuttle and a \_Broadsword\_) and open fired with his Photon burst rifle destroying the Turian Interceptor. Just as quickly he transformed back into his vehicle mode and continued his pursuit. He got a lock on his target and fired two missiles. Both got a direct hit on the target, destroying the Salarian Fighter.

The UNSC had the battle up here well in hand. He wanted to be down on the planet helping out like some of the other Aerialbots, but Optimus gave him strict orders. His attention was returned to the battle when a Turian fighter almost crashed into him. It quickly turned around and open fired its guns on him. He quickly turned back into his Cybertronian form while, took out his Energon Club and whacked the fighters cockpit shattering it and exposing the pilot inside to the cold of space. With the pilot dead the fighter flew wildly out of control with no direction until it crashed into the Kinetic Barriers of an Asari Dreadnought.

All over the space battle the others were have similar experiences with the Citadel Fighters and Interceptors. Some of the Aerialbots were able to land on the Citadel vessel and take out some of the weapons and point defense systems by hand. Jetfire and Air Raid had landed on the same Turian Cruiser. They proceeded to remove any turrets and missile launchers from the vessel. Air Raid found a window into the Turian cruiser; there were several Turians behind who were nearly startled out of their skins when they saw him. He actually waved to them then continued destroying their weapons; the faces on the Turians were priceless. Air Raid planed to make pictures of the site from his memory banks later on.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>UNSC INFINITY<strong>

Main Bridge

Lasky looked over the battle on the holotable. While they were still outnumbered close to thirty ships his fleet was really holding their own. As the fleets head commanding officer he was proud. Despite the heavy amounts of fire the Citadel could throw at them \_Infinity's \_shields were holding at a steady 83.5%. The \_Zeus \_and the \_Battlecruisers \_were in a similar position. The other two Carriers were relatively unharmed having stayed at the back of the fleet out of the line of fire.

His Cruisers were taking the full brunt of the Citadel's attack. Their job was to help to protect the Paris-class Frigates and they did their job well. But their shields were taking a hammering. Lasky had a plan but to pull it off he had to wait until all of the Citadel's ground forces were deployed planetside. He hoped it was soon. His battlecruisers were starting to take real damage, multiple of \_Infinity's Strident \_escorts were starting to report hull breaches, and the battleships were getting pounded by the remaining Asari vessels.

Lasky noticed that the Citadel's heavy stream of fire seemed to be decreasing, even their GARDIAN Lasers seemed to be failing. \_"Maybe their ships aren't build for long periods on combat," he thought\_. He didn't have long to ponder this train of thought as Roland appeared on the holo-projector.

"Admiral, the \_Autumn-class Cruiser \*\*Steady as She Goes \*\*\_is reporting damage to her engines and loss of shield strength. Half of the \_Stridents \_shields are at 54% and under. And I don't think that the \_Orion-class Battlecruiser \*\*Superstition \*\*\_is going to last much longer."

"Any good news Roland?"

"Yes sir, scans show that no more troop transports are being launched from the Citadel fleet. I believe they've sent all they can offer."

Lasky smiled in happiness and relief. "Good Roland. Contact Fleet Master Abel Adelaïs. Tell him that the 'Bait has been taken. Repeat, the bait has been taken'."

Away from the battle a single slip space portal opened up and out came the CAS-class Assault Carrier the **\*\*\_Guilty Penance\_\*\***, the flagship of Fleet Master Lina Adelaïs and of The Fleet of Penance. On the bridge Lina stood proudly as she watched the rest of her fleet emerge from slipspace

"Open communication between us and all Citadel ships. It is time to reveal ourselves."

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Asari Dreadnought <em>Athame<em>\*\*

**\*\*CIC\*\***

Matriarch Lidanya was very worried. Over half of the Citadel fleet, thought to be the mightiest fleet in the galaxy, now lay as no more than space junk. These aliens had put up a tremendous fight and from her point of view had barley taken any damage. She had had her insecurities and fears over fighting this aliens. And now she seemed to have been proven right. She would gladly to the battle, but she knew General Aulus would not stop until the aliens were crushed into dust and Gothis was reclaimed. Her thoughts were interrupted as another Turian Dreadnought was destroyed by the aliens Super 5.6km Dreadnought.

"Matriarch, a ship almost as large as the aliens 5.6km Super Dreadnought but of different design has just appeared out of nowhere," shouted the sensors operator.

"What, show me," ordered Lidanya.

The image on the holo-project changed from the space battle to a large new vessel. It was incredibly sleek and incredibly deep graceful silhouettes. The ship was clearly of different design to what they were currently fighting. As an Asari she marveled at the ships beauty, it almost looked like something her people would design.

Before Lidanya could order anything the image on the holo-projector changed again and her comm's officer let her know they were being hailed. A holographic image of a large, no jawed, four mandibles, hooved creature with four digits and two thumbs on each hand wearing red armor. Throughout every Citadel ship appeared the image of Fleet Master Lina Adelaïs .

Lina stood with authority and strength as she was away to addressed her enemies. Starting with the same infamous words used to start the bloodiest war in the history of the OSA.

"Your destruction is the will of the gods, all ships open fire. Burn their cowardly hides!"

Lidanya was lost for words at what happened next. Around the battle slipspace portals opened up and out came the Fleet of Penance followed by the **Fleet of Retribution**. This was followed by Twi'lek, Mon Calamari, and Mandalorian ships exiting from hyperspace, all together over five hundred new contacts. The Citadel fleet was completely boxed in. Immediately the OSA fleet opened fire on the Citadel fleet. Turian and Salarian ships were destroyed almost instantly. **Type-27 Space Banshees**, **T-65 X-wings**, **RZ-1 A-wing Interceptors**, **Y-wings**, **Aurek-class tactical strike fighters**, **Seraphs** and more swarmed the Citadel fighters and Interceptors out-numbering them ten to one. Bombers started taking out the weapons systems of the enemy vessels. Ion weapons were fired at the Asari vessels, the order from Lina having been issued throughout the fleets. Several Covenant and UNSC entered the upper atmosphere of Gothis and release thousands of drop-pods and dropships in the orbit above the Capital City.

Matriarch Lidanya ordered her comm's officer to open communication between the **\_Penance\_** and the **\_Athame\_**. The image of Lina remained but she guessed they had managed to establish communication between the ships. She was surprised when the Sangheili acknowledged her and said "Speak Asari."

"I'm Matriarch Lidanya of the Citadel Council and leader of this fleet, please stop your attacks, we shall do the same and allow us to open negotiation between our races."

What Lina said next surprised her, "You wished to open communications, prevent bloodshed. You shall live, your friends will perish. "As soon as Lina had finished speaking, three Ion rounds hit the **\_Athame\_** disabling all systems but life support. The Citadel fleet did not stand a chance against the OSA, while some ships were crippled the majority were destroyed.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Gothis Capital City<strong>

**South-Western District**

Saren Arterius, along the rest of the Citadel ground forces were moving through the rubble filled streets of the Capital City to reach the Turian resistance that were currently fighting the unidentified hostiles up ahead. He like most of the Turians had been trained at Gothis and upon see the destruction swore vengeance against them. There was no doubt in his mind that the hostiles were the same race as the one his brother had been sent to subdue. No news had reached them of what had happened so the Hierarchy assumed the worst despite the Council dismissing the attackers as nothing more as pirates or terrorists. Not only did he swear vengeance against the race for the destruction of Gothis but also for the death of his brother.

The all eventually got up to the resistance front line against the hostiles behind a makeshift barricade. Many were not only surprised when it turned out to be a new race but by the races similar appearance to Asari. Turians soldiers joined their brothers at the

front to push the enemy back. Salarian STG agents set up sniper nests in the buildings and the Asari Commandoes provided support and defense with their biotics. Saren and a few others took one of the leaders of the resistance aside.

"What's your name and rank," asked Saren.

"Second-class Captain Sirius, sir," answered the Turian.

"Right, what's the situation," asked a Salarian commander.

"The enemy have held the city for the most part of two days. They've been flying around placing heavy infantry and Anti-Air defenses all over. Recently they started to retreat from this area. We saw that as an opportunity to attack. We hit them as hard as we could but their lines are holding," said Captain Sirius.

"Anything we should know," ask an Asari commando.

"Yeah, if you come across any 3-5 meter tall six legged flying robots don't engage unless you have a heavy weapon and never engage more than one at a time. If you especially see any seven-foot-tall mechanical looking creatures or anything that as a sword or what looks like a solid beam of light do not engage, run the fuck away."

Saren immediately got angry and violently grabbed the Turian by the collar. "Turians don't retreat! You will only see a Turian's back once he's deadâ€¦that's our motto in Hierarchy and you would do well to remember that!"

The stunned Captain quickly regained control of himself and shook his head vigorously trying to placate his superior. "Yes sir. My men are at your command. What are your orders, sir?"

"We've sent a Company of our forces along with a company of Mako's to attack the enemy from the North District of the city. It's the fastest way to the city center where they've set up their HQ. Hopefully with most of the enemies forces directed at us the Company will be able to get pretty close before their detected."

"Sir the enemy is sending reinforcements," shouted a Turian Private . A platoon of UNSC Marines and Death Watch Shock Troopers supported by Basilisk War Droids came running and flying round the corners and up the streets. Saren ordered for heavy turrets to be placed on the barricade and for everyone to prepare to repel the enemy.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Gothis Capital City<strong>

\*\*North District \*\*

\*\*Citadel Company\*\*

A Turian by the name of Cyprian Magnus was leading the Company assigned to flank the alien hostiles and attack their HQ from their rear guard. Beside him was Maya, the Asari Spectre in charge of the Asari Commandoes in the Company, and Athanasius the Salarian Spectre in charge of the STG agents of the Company. They had a few M35 Mako's

accompanying them on their mission.

Although Cyprian saw this as a potential suicide mission he new they didn't have much choice, due to their ground and armor forces having been greatly depleted when those one hundred ships were destroyed by the nuclear mines. So far everything seemed to be going as planned. They hadn't met any resistance and they were almost halfway to the aliens HQ.

What Cyprian didn't know was that the OSA already knew they were coming. At the captured airbase that the Death Watch had turned into a makeshift hospital/command center radar scans had picked them up awhile ago. Vizsla was originally going to send in some men on a couple of Basilisk War Droids, but Johnson had told him to let the UNSC handle them. Besides letting them get far would drive them into a false sense of security.

So the Citadel Company continued to move on. The silence and the absence of sentry's started to unnerve some of the soldiers. The quiet was broken when a the sound of a single gunshot filled the air. An Asari Commando screamed for two seconds before she died from her chest exploding. Then they received an even bigger scare when another shot that sounded almost like the quiet screech of a bird (so quiet it was almost unheard) followed the first and another Asari Commando was struck, this time in the head.

But what really got everyone's attention and increased their fear was instead of dropping dead the Asari turned a bright yellow/orange. Her whole body was momentarily engulfed in a red light. Then it turned yellow and her whole body started to disintegrate right before everyone's eyes. There was nothing left of the Asari to indicate she was ever there.

The Company was so busy watching the Asari disintegrate that the unseen snipers were able to get off two more shots. Another Asari disintegrated while a Salarian had his head blown off. One of the Salarian sniper hiding behind one of the Mako's noticed a visible orange and blue beam from the sniper shots and followed them to their point of origin.

About two hundred yards away on the top of a fifteen story building was Noble Team; with Jun wielding his Gauss Rifle and Jarrod wielding a Z-750 Special Application Sniper Rifle, or more commonly known as the Binary Rifle. It was Jarrod's Forerunner weapon that had disintegrated the two Asari. This was not by accident as Jarrod had specifically targeted the blue female aliens having personally seen how dangerous they could be.

Cyprian like the other Spectre's had received the reports about the 6-7ft armor behemoths. The reports repeatedly that they were extremely dangerous and although Cyprian had not personally seen them in combat he wasn't about to take chances. He ordered one of the Mako's to fire its main gun at the Spartans. The Mako's 155mm Mass Accelerator Cannon fired on the building and looking through a pair of binoculars he thought that they had been killed. Then through the smoke he saw six shapes falling to the ground completely unharmed.

\*\*\*Noble Team's POV\*\*\*



Through the scopes on their rifles Jarrod and Jun saw that one of the Citadel tanks was going to fire on their position. The team of Spartans jumped before the roof they were previous on found itself with a chunk blown off. About half way to the ground the Spartans activated their Thrusters slowing their decent. The ground below them cracked and broke when they hit the ground.

By this time a Battalion's worth of Marines, ODS'T's, and Rangers appeared having been signaled to attack by Noble's engagement with the enemy. The Citadel Company answered their arrival with four shots from each of their Mako's. Two dozen humans were killed by the 155mm mass accelerated shells. The Mako's followed up with a barrage from their coaxial-mounted machine guns. The heavy mass accelerator rounds broke through the human soldiers shields very quickly forcing the UNSC to get behind what ever cover they could find, a few dozen soldiers left out in the open were torn to shreds.

Each member of Noble except for Jun were leading a squad of UNSC Rangers. Jun was among the UNSC snipers that had taken up sniping positions in the buildings nearby and was overlooking the battle. Carter, Kat, Emile, Jorge, and Jarrod protected their squads by each activating a Bubble Shield. The gold honey-combed, tinted protective sphere protected the Spartans and Rangers; the Mako's fired their machine guns until they over heated and even a shot from their main cannons but the shields still held till they deactivated.

Every Marine, ODS'T and Ranger fired everything from a M6H Pistol to a M319 Individual Grenade Launcher. The Asari Commando's provided the Citadel soldiers with Barrier support protecting as many as they could. About ten Turians and Salarrians were killed, but most were able to use anything from overturned cars in the street to the Mako's and the Asari's biotic Barriers for cover.

A few Barriers were really strained when they were hit with a round from an ARC-920 and then shattered by a rockets from M41 Surface-to-Surface Rocket Launcher's. Two teams of Asari Commando's were killed in the heavy fire that resulted from the collapsed Barriers. The Mako's were fired upon by a second wave of rockets. Unable to use their micro-thrusters to avoid the rockets due to friendly forces being behind them the Mako's were forced to take the rocket's head on. The Mako's Kinetic Barriers survived the barrage, though they suffered greatly. Another volley of mass accelerated shells and machine gun rounds sounded from the Mako's dealing dozens of casualties to the UNSC.

Carter knew they had to take out those Citadel tanks and fast. He watched as Jarrod fired his Telsa Cannon at one of the Mako's, but the powerful blast of electricity only seemed to stun the tank not destroy it.

"This is Noble 1. We are under heavy tank fire, need immediate assistance, repeat immediate assistance."

"Noble 1, this is Pelican Eight-Six. We have four special packages and are immediately impound on your position. Hang tight were on our way."

"Copy that Eight-Six. Noble 1 out."

Carter was glad to hear help was coming. Out of the corner of his eye

he noticed a four Salarians trying to sneak up on a squad of Marines and a squad of Asari Commandos that were getting dangerously close to his own squad's position. Utilizing speed only experienced soldiers could achieve Carter fired his DC-15S blaster carbine and the Rangers fired their Morita Mk. I Rifles , Morita MK. III Assault Rifles, and Morita Mk III SAW's. The Asari were taken by surprise and were cut down by the wall of weapons fire. Incidentally, the Salarians sneaking up on the Marines were dispatched by Jorge and his Machine Gun.

The Mako's once again prepared to open fire when four Pelicans flew over the horizon and fired their 70mm Autocannons, distracting the Mako's attention and downing about a dozen Turians. The main gun of the Mako's roared but the Pelicans were shielded and protected from the mass accelerated shells. Unable to get close to the ground without endangering themselves the Pelicans dropped their cargo then high tailed it out of there.

"Packages delivered Noble 1. Give them hell."

To the Citadel soldiers what the Pelicans dropped looked like four huge metal block. But Carter and the UNSC knew what they were, four models of the HRUNTING/YGGDRASIL Mark IX Armor Defense System, also known as the Mantis. Carter just smiled when he saw them.

"Jun, you and Jorge provide covering fire. The rest of Noble follow me. We got Mantis's to pilot."

\*\*\_"Cyprian's POV"\_\*\*

Despite being heavily outnumbered the Company was holding its own thanks to the Barrier support of the Asari Commandoes. But all wasn't good. The heavy enemy fire could and was weathering down the biotic Barriers, the Mako's Kinetic Barriers were being pounded, and the UNSC snipers were raining havoc on the Citadel's troops.

At first he thought those alien ships were carrying reinforcements, but he was confused when they just dropped four huge blocks of metal. Before he could pursue this line of thought the amount of enemy fire increased three times. All of his men and women were forced to get to cover or get killed. Just behind the Mako he was hiding behind Cyprian could see four of the armor creatures run for the blocks of metal. What he saw next took both him and all of his men by surprise.

The four armor creatures opened a hatch on top of blocks of metal and dropped into them. Then with a hiss and the sound of moving gears the four presumed blocks of metal "unpacked" into four large 5'7 meter tall mechs. The surprise wore off in the worst possible way as one of the mechs fired five rockets at the Mako he was behind. Jumping to safety, Cyprian could hear the tanks explode as well as feel the heat of the explosion as it did. Anyone who was within six meters of the tank when it went up in smoke died as well.

Cyprian couldn't help but be mesmerized by the power of the mechs. In a mere matter of minutes they had turned the tide of the battle in favor of the aliens and ground the Citadel Company's attack to a halt. The hypersonic rounds of the mechs heavy machine gun cut through his forces with devastating accuracy and dealing many Turians, Salarians, and Asari a horrific and painful death. Their

mutilated and mangled bodies falling to the ground in a mass of flesh and bone, as their agonizing wails filled the air and filled the ears of the survivors.

Several Commando's attempted to protect themselves and the Mako's by putting up Barriers, but the mechs built in missile pods launched all their missiles at once and in matter of seconds, Asari Commando's were dead along with all but one Mako.

The last Mako almost got lucky and was able to knock one of the mechs off balance with a shot from the main cannon, but the mech was quick to recover and sent a burst of missile fire causing the tank to blow up and leaving it a useless pile of flaming junk.

"RETREAT. All UNITS FALL BACK," shouted Cyprian. The mission had failed. Without the Mako's they had no chance to complete their objective.

All survivors turned and ran full throttle desperate to get away from the deadly machines. They didn't get very far as their escape rout was blocked by giant six legged flying machines with aliens riding them. There were also about a hundred aliens hovering in the air using jetpacks of all things.

\_\*\*"Carter's/Noble 1's POV"\*\*\_

The Mantis's performed beautifully. The tanks were destroyed and the enemy was in full retreat. And it seemed that Pre Vizsla had arrived and had them caught. The Citadel troops were now had no where to go. So acting on the situation Carter made them a offer using the translated language program.

"I am Captain Carter of the OSA. You are surrounded, carrying wounded and no hope for escape. Put down your guns and surrender and you will be shown mercy."

The surviving Turians, Salarian, and Asari gave up without any more struggle.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Gothis Capital City<strong>

\*\*South-Western District\*\*

Saren decked down to avoid getting his head blown off. Thing weren't going as smoothly as he had hoped. The enemy had destroyed the heavy turrets with some sort of laser weapon (Spartan Laser). The Commando's had attempted to provide Barrier support, but that only had a limited success as the rain of fire the aliens pored on their position never seemed to end. The only saving grace was that most of the Salarian snipers and Asari Commando's were still alive.

"Sir the enemy I can see some of those giant armored creatures," shouted a Turian in hysterics.

\_"Oh, that's all I need,"\_ Saren thought.

Looking over his cover Saren could see six of the rumored "Iron Giants" (Blue Team). Saren grabbed hold of missile launcher and aimed

at the Master Chief. He fired and smiled when the missile looked like it was going to hit the armor soldier. This particular armored soldier was John-117 and to him the missile was almost moving in slow motion. He ran forward pulled back his hand and "Bitch Slapped" the missile away at a nearby building just in front of John and the platoon.

All the local Turians and Citadel forces were shocked beyond words at what the Master Chief had just done. Such a thing should not have been possible. Suddenly the ground shook violently causing them all to fall over.

Suddenly a large purple mechanical, almost insect like leg appeared round the corner, followed by a large beetle like head with green glowing pincers. Another leg of the mechanical behemoth appeared taking down the corner of a building. As the machine positioned itself it revealed it was a large mobile platform with a large tower at the back. It was a Type-47 Ultra Heavy Assault Platform also known as a Scarab, the most dangerous ground vehicle of the OSA.

The Citadel reinforcements just looked at the Scarab in awe. The behemoth was nothing like the design of the ships in orbit. On board it appeared to be two different races to what they were fighting, Kig'Yar snipers and Unggoy to be exact. Then it hit them. They were facing an alien alliance!

"What the heck is that thing," shouted a Salarian.

"I have no idea, but I have heard reports of at least two of those things. I thought it was just excuses," said the Turian leader.

The scarab fired its main canon, giving off a deafening roar as it fired a hose like beam of plasma at the Citadel forces. Those caught in the beam were instantly killed as the plasma intense heat burned them. Below the machines belly platoons of different OSA races charged down the street, the Citadel forces were shocked beyond believe at the amount of different allies they were facing.

"Call in some fighters to take that thing out," shouted Saren as he returned fire to the enemy.

Asari commandos and other biotics raced to the front and started to rip apart any with their biotic powers. But all the aliens were shielded, so their biotic effects were diminished.

Saren fired his missile launcher, killing a Mon Calamari Soldier and collapsing the shields of a Jiralhanae. An Asari beside him used her biotics to kill an ODST tearing the poor fellow apart. She then attempted a warp on a female Twi'lek who seemed to be wearing only light armor. Seeing the attack come at her the Twi'lek thrust out her hand and actually slowed the warp field until it disintegrated into nothing. Not only was the Asari shocked at this but everyone who saw it including Saren was. Before the Twi'lek Jedi could launch an attack of her own, the cries of John-117a Sangheili told everyone to get down into cover.

The Citadel forces knew why as they heard familiar the sound of Turian Interceptors. Immediately gunfire rained down on the OSA forces, killing most who had not taken cover. The Interceptors focused their attention on the Scarab and launched a barrage of

missiles. The pilots and the Citadel forces were shocked when a large bright white shield surrounded the Scarab completely protecting it from any damage. The tower at the back of the Scarab fired green balls of plasma at the Turians Interceptors and managed to take down one. The head canon fired again into the Citadel forces but this time turned and aimed for the Salarian sniper nests in the buildings.

On one of the tall skyscrapers, twenty Ikran Maktos watched as the Turian Interceptors launched their attack on the Scarab. They had been ordered to wait there until any enemy aircrafts show. Now was their time to join the fight. The leader gave a few whoops and all the Ikrans launched themselves from the building.

On board the Scarab several Jedi including Revan ran out onto the top deck. As soon as they saw the Interceptors come back around for another pass they focused the force around them and used force grip to slow them down or even stop them completely. As Revan grabbed hold of one he was able to use the full power of the force to crush the Interceptor into a ball of metal. Again the Citadel forces were stunned at such power. They were even more surprised when large winged beasts with ten feet tall raiders descended on them.

Asari, Turians and Salarians had to duck or jump out of the way to avoid the ten low flying beasts that came their way. The Na'vi riders fired their guns into the Citadel forces killing several. Some of the Turians attempted to fire their missiles at the Ikran but they were too fast. The other ten harassed the Turian Interceptors. Most were too fast for the Ikrans to catch up to but the ones slowed by the Jedi on the Scarab were tore apart, with the Ikrans forcing the Turians from the cockpits in some cases.

The Interceptors turned their attention to the Ikrans and started to chase them down. Two Maktos lost their shields under the continuous fire. One got lucky as five Sangheili Banshees joined the fight destroying the Interceptor that was chasing him. The other however was not as lucky as the Interceptor continued to fire, causing her Ikran to fall from the sky and crash in the street.

The Na'vi fell a few feet from her mount, she was badly hurt from the fire but she was alive. Her Ikran was not as fortunate, the beast been shot, quickly its life left it and it's eyes closed. As the Na'vi rider attempted to get up she found she was close to the enemy's line. A Turian ran up to her; pistol aimed at her he was ready to end her life. Then the same Turian found a plasma sword through his back as a Sangheili Zealot de-locked. A squad of Jiralhanae went and extracted the injured Na'vi while Chief and the rest of Blue Team continued to charge the Citadels quickly collapsing lines.

Suddenly Cortana's voice rang out from Johns comm's, "Everyone get back and take cover we're about to have backup." Looking up into the sky one could see thousands upon thousands of drop-pods falling from the atmosphere.

Saren was furious most of the force sent to attack the South-Western defenses had been wiped out. However before he could think of something to do, a Covenant drop-pod and an ODST-pod crash-landed near him. Despite their belief that nothing would have been able to survive that, the Citadel forces was caught total unprepared as the pods opened releasing their occupants. They were quickly starting to

get box in as the enemy came from both sides and the building tops. Pelicans, Phantoms and Falcons joined the fight as they shot down any remaining Interceptors, deliver fresh troops and gunned down the enemy.

Saren took cover to avoid some gunfire while at the same a frag grenade landed behind the rubble he was behind. Quickly moving away and putting up a biotic Barrier Saren was able to protect himself from the dangerous shrapnel just in time.

At this point the Master Chief noticed Saren and rushed him. Saren reached out for his gun which had flown away in the blast with his left arm; but at the same time, Chief had closed the distance toward Saren. He reached behind his back and pulled out a combat plasma knife and sliced Saren's left arm clear off of him.

"AAAAAAHHHHHHHHHHHH" screamed Saren as he held were his left arm was with his right. He looked at Chief as he raised a pistol to Saren's head about to end the Turian's life. But just thenâ€¦

"Attention Citadel forces," said a Sangheili over the comm of a Phantom. "Your fleets in orbit have lost the battle, and most of your ground forces are either dead or have surrendered. Surrender now and you will be spared."

The remaining Asari, Turian and Salarrians did just so and dropped their weapons. They couldn't believe it, the Citadel had lost. Saren looked up at the Master Chief. "What are you?"

I am Master Chief Supreme Commander Spartan John-117.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Gothis Orbit<strong>

As the OSA fleet cleaned up the destroyed UNSC ships and gathered the remaining Citadel fleet and survivors, a Salarrian probe had recorded the entire battle and sent it to a Salarrian STG ship on the other side of the Relay. They began to plot a course back to the Citadel to show the Council the footage that had been recorded. They prayed that they would return in time to stop the madness before it escalated. The battle for Gothis was officially over.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>AN: I wanted to add this before I left on vacation but I ran out of time. I apologize to everyone who thought this was an update.<strong>

\*\*There were a few more things I wanted to add to this chapter. But it got so big, I decided to write them into the next chapter. I'm sorry to everyone who was looking forward to the Citadel/OSA confrontation but you'll have to wait one more chapter. Again I'm sorry.\*\*

\*\*MERRY CHRISTMAS EVERYONE AND A HAPPY NEW YEAR!\*\*

\*\*I repeat,\*\*

**\*\*MERRY CHRISTMAS TO ALL! AND TO ALL A GOODNIGHT!\*\***

## 10. Chapter 10: Turian's vs Mandalorians

**\*\*A/N: I'M BACK EVERYONE! I FINALLY GOT THIS CHAPTER FINISHED! I'M SO SO SORRY FOR KEEPING YOU ALL WAITING. I'VE BEEN PUTTING THIS OFF FOR TO LONG. I \*\*apologize \*\*once again. \*\*In this chapter I've \*\*\*\*\*included the first appearance of a couple of future characters that will play a large role in this story. I shall spill nothing else. You'll just have to read and find out. \*\*\*\*\*So here is the new chapter, I hope you all like it.\*\*\*\*\***

**\*\*I don't own Halo, Mass Effect, or any other franchise.\*\***

**\* \* \***

**<p><strong>May 30, 26502157\*\***

**\*\*Serpent Nebula\*\***

**\*\*Widow System\*\***

**\*\*The Citadel\*\***

**\*\*Turian Councilor's Private Quarters\*\***

Sparatus was currently in his private quarters on the Citadel. This was where he usually did all of his work, which included singing documents or talking to officials and diplomats when the Council was not in session. He was trying to get some work done as if it was a normal day. But no matter how hard he tried to get absorbed into this work his mind kept wandering back to Gothis. The Citadel Fleet should have gotten their by now. He was confident he would hear good news soon.

Suddenly a red light started blinking rapidly on his computer screen. Clicking on the flashing light Sparatus saw that it was an emergency message. Sparatus was slightly dreading what the message contained. Before the Citadel Fleet had left Gothis Sparatus had given General Aulus a special transmittion comm device. When activated, the device would alert the Turian Councilor should anything happen during the fleet's mission. The message definitely did not contain good news. It was from General Aulus, the mission to retake Gothis had failed.

Sparatus felt shocked, angry and a hole other set of emotions. How could the Citadel Fleet, the mightiest fleet in the known Galaxy have failed to retake Gothis? This enemy must be greater than he or anyone else realized. It would not be long before his fellow Councilors discovered this for themselves.

Looking down on his desk Sparatus' eyes landed upon a data disk. The data inside the disk contained a newly compromised contingency plan. One of his agents had sent it to him saying that it had been intercepted from a Salarian STG scout team. The Salarian's had found a Mass Relay that lead into the enemy's space, if the data they collected was accurate. After eliminating the STG team the agent sent the data directly to Sparatus.

Sparatus checked out the agent that had sent him the data and everything came back fine. The codes were correct as well as the agents identification number. The data did indeed lean towards the Relay leading into the enemy's territory. Sparatus was hopeful that a relatively small fleet could be sent through unnoticed, find an enemy colony and take them by surprise. This would involve activating the dormant Mass Relay, which was breaking the Citadel Conventions, but Sparatus thought that desperate times called for desperate measures. Hopefully if the Hierarchy was able to capture one of the alien's colonies they could force them to surrender and give back Gothis.

His mind made up Sparatus pressed a button on his holo-screen and sent the mission orders to his picked out fleet. In the back of his mind he was still holding out hope that the report was somehow wrong.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Unknown location<strong>

**\*\*Turian 705th Exploration Fleet\*\***

General Claudius was the head commanding officer of the 705th Exploration Fleet. The Fleet consisted of 20 Frigates, 19 Cruisers, and 1 Dreadnought. He was currently standing on the bridge of his personal Cruiser the Undying Duty waiting for orders. The fleet was currently in the middle of nowhere holding position next to an inactive Mass Relay. If their information was correct the Relay led into the hostile alien's territory.

Claudius's family, like many Turian's in high positions, came from a long line of military service. His father was a lord who expected great things from him. Hopefully he could continue to live up to the family name through this next mission. Claudius had been handpicked by the Turian Councilor himself. This mission could end a war or erupt it past the point of no return.

He was brought out of his thoughts when his helmsmen informed his that the Turian Councilor had granted him permission to proceed with the mission.

Claudius sighed as he took a deep breath. He had his orders and he would see them through, he then activated the fleet wide comm channels. "This is General Claudius to all fleet personal. Our mission is a go, I repeat, the mission is a go. Send the Relay activation codes and let's find us an alien planet."

Outside the previous inactive Mass relay began to glow, signifying that it was activating. Once the element zero in the Relay was fully glowing blue the fleet headed towards and went through the now active Mass Relay.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>OSA Space<strong>

**\*\*UNSC Colony Borealis \*\***

The colony **\*\*Borealis\*\*** was located deep in the Outer Rim



Territories. It was one of three colonies, including Shanxi, that were located just on the border of OSA Space and the verge of Wild Space. The planet was named after the natural electromagnetic storms that plagued the planet from time to time and created colorful lights in the sky. Most of the planet was covered in low grasslands, along with a few mountain ranges and two oceans.

**Borealis** was a relatively new colony with a population of 100,000. Most people lived in the colony's only city **Aurora**. A total of about a few thousand lived in small villages that totted the entire planet. Not much had been invested into the colony yet, due to its electromagnetic storms, which would cut off communication and disrupted most instruments. Any ship hoping to enter the planet's atmosphere during a storm needed to be equipped with a disruptor box, allowing the ship to land on the colony unharmed.

A large colony typically had a large defense force. So **Borealis** being a small colony only had a small defense force. There was no fleet or Orbital Defense Platforms in orbit. The Marine Garrison totaled at one Regiment (3,200). The Regiment was mostly made up of Colonial Militia. A few small armor divisions made up of "Warthogs" and "Scorpion Tanks" were also located on the colony.

Nothing out of the ordinary ever really happened on **Borealis**. Until now that is.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Turian 705th Exploration Fleet<strong>

**100,000 kilometers from Borealis**

The Turian Fleet exited the Relay in a small blue flash. General Claudius immediately gave the well-practiced order to scan the system they arrived in. If their data was correct they were now in enemy territory.

The navigator spoke up. "Sir, scan dictate that we are in a small four planet system. Two gas giants and two solid planetoids. The first is too close to the system's sun to be habitable, but the other one is in the habitation zone. In fact, I'm detecting lots of radio signals coming from the planet. I think it's a colony, sir."

Claudius smiled; he had already found a colony to attack. If they were lucky it would be in his talons within a week. "Tell all ships to enter attack formation and jump to FLT."

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Borealis Orbit<strong>

Once the fleet exited FTL over **Borealis** Claudius got a good look at the planet he was about to attack. Most of the planet was covered in green and was mostly comprised of grassland as far as he could see. That would pose a problem as there would be little to no cover for his men. He would never say it out loud but he thought that the blue of the two oceans gave the planet a very pretty and pleasant look. Lights that could only come from a city were shining like stars, most likely meaning that the side of the planet with the

colony's main city was experiencing its night cycle.

This made Claudius smile. This would make his invasion even easier if his shuttles and ground transports were hidden in the dark.

"Helmsman, sound a message throughout the fleet. All soldiers are to report to their shuttles and prepare for immediate departure. "

"Yes sir. General I'm detecting an electrical storm equivalent to lightning coming from the night side of the planet. The shuttles will be in danger of being struck if they fly into it, sir."

"Then just have the shuttles fly around it. Spirits, a rookie trainee could haveâ€¦"

What a rookie trainee could have told him Claudius never got to say as red lights flashed on and alarms started to ring throughout the ship.

"WHAT IN THE NAME OF THE SPIRITS IS GOING ON," Claudius shouted.

The sensors officer was the one who replied. "Sir, alarms are sounding off through the entire fleet. Some kind of storm appeared out of nowhere. We're caught right in the middle of it."

It was true. One of the very electromagnetic storms that **Borealis** was famous for had crept up without warning. This was the worst thing that could have happened to the Turian Fleet, as they were in the very heart of the storm.

All around Claudius sparks were flying as numerous instruments failed or shutdown. He could only assume that the same thing was happening to every ship in his fleet.

The helmsman shouted over the increasing level of panic, "Sir, we're trapped in a major electromagnetic storm. All of our systems are failing. I can't keep the ship steady. We're going to crash onto the planet."

No sooner had the helmsman stopped than the ship started to lose altitude. Slowly at first but quickly gaining speed as they entered the atmosphere.

The last thing Claudius saw was the bright red and orange fire outside the ship as they passed through the atmosphere. Another increase in the ships ever accelerating fall threw him hard into an inactive computer screen. The screen broke and Claudius's world went black.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Borealis Groundside<strong>

A big thunderstorm was currently taking place planetside. Flashes of thunder and lightning surged through the black sky as rain continued to fall heavily. These were the conditions a squad of UNSC Marines unfortunately found themselves in.

Second Lieutenant's Owen Wells and Jasmine O'Conner along with

Lieutenant-Commander Franklin Booms had "drawn the short straw" and were chosen by Command to patrol the ocean line fifty kilometers Southeast of \*\*Aurora\*\*. While they were nice and dry in their Warthog, given the choice none of them would be out here in this kind of weather.

"Why are they having us patrol all the way out here anyway? No one in their right minds would be out in this weather," complained Jasmine.

"Stow the belly aching princess. Remember, you're a Marine. We've got a job to do and we will do it without complaints, understood," said Franklin.

"Yes Lieutenant-Commander," Jasmine answered.

"Sir, Command just sent word that another electrical storm is erupting. It's going to get difficult to keep up comms with HQ real soon. Should we turn back," reported Second Lieutenant Owen Wells.

Franklin nodded. "Yes Lieutenant, let's get back to base. This rain storm is really getting worse anyway."

Just as they started to turnaround and head back, Jasmine looked out her window and saw something in the sky that wasn't rain or lighting. It was a small red dot of light in a sea of black. The red slowly got bigger and was soon joined by more red dots. By the time there were forty red dots the others in the Warthog had noticed.

The red dots in the skies were ships breaking through the planet's atmosphere. As more lightning flashed across the sky the small Marine squad could finally see the outlines of the falling ships. They were quite small by UNSC standards. The smallest measuring at 200 meters, the largest measuring at 1 kilometer, and they were all shaped like predatory birds. The only difference in their design was their size.

There was a large beach overlooked by the cliff the Marine squad was on. Judging by the trajectory of their fall, the unknown ships would crash on or near the beach. Some of the other ships would either land in the ocean or against the giant rocks of the shoreline.

Deciding not to take any chances with their safety Lieutenant-Commander Franklin ordered Second Lieutenant Wells to back the Warthog up as fast as he could. He needn't have bothered as when the bird-like ships crash landed none hit the cliff the Warthog was stationed on. Most of the small 200 meter ships had landed on the beach line; meaning they landed on the wet sand where the sand met the water. A few of the larger 500-700 meter long ships had landed on the beach line as well. But most of them had crashed into the rocky cliffs and had settled into the water. Half were halfway under water; others had crashed into each other and landed in torn apart junk piles, also in the water. The largest ship fared the best and the worst of all. It had crashed head first into the cliff side above the beach, going halfway through the wall of earth until the back of the ship started to splinter and broke apart so you could see the inside of the ship. With a loud booming crash the damaged vessel crashed right onto the sand below where one of its "wings" broke off.

Despite the state it was in most of the alien ships were surprisingly well intact. Some would most likely sink further into the water until they disappeared forever. It was impossible to tell if any crews had survived just yet. But it wasn't out of the realm of possibility.

The Warthog having witnessed and survived the event returned the top of the cliff and the squad inside got out to look upon the crash landed alien ships themselves. Lieutenant-Commander Franklin finished looking at the downed ships and turned to Second Lieutenant Wells, yelling so he could be heard over the roaring storm, "Get on the horn and inform command that we alien ships have crash landed on our shores."

Wells hurried and activated the Warthog's radio. He was mostly getting static as he switched through channels trying to reach command. The storm was getting worse.

"This is Second Lieutenant Owen Well to Command. We have spotted unidentified alien ships crash landed on the beach head 200 meters from our position. I repeat, there are unidentified alien ships on Borealis."

Finally they got a signal and response through all the static. But it was patchy with pieces missing. The storm was really messing with their communications.

\_"Second \_\_\_\*\*\*\_\_\_ Well's, \_\_\_\*\*\*\_\_\_Borealis Command. Confirm that\_\_\_\*\*\*\_\_\_alien shi\_\_\_\*\*\*\_\_\_sited."\_

"Confirmed Command, alien vessels have crash landed on Borealis."

\_"Head back\_\_\_ \*\*\*\_\_\_. Debrief personally, Command\_\_\_\*\*\*\_\_\_out."\_

The transmittion cut out.

"You heard them, let's head back." Franklin said. The Warthog roared to life and speed away from the downed alien ships.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Borealis<strong>

\*\*\*\* Crashed Turian 705th Exploration Fleet\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*Flagship \_Indomitable Spirit\_\*\*\*\*

The world had been consumed by a sea of red and black darkness. Nothing else existed. Slowly the red and black sea started to part and sound started to reenter the world. As General Claudius continued to regain consciousness he noticed three things. One, his ship had lost all power and the entire deck was bathed in the red emergency lights. Two, the bodies of his crew had been thrown and scattered everywhere, how many were alive or dead he didn't know. Three he was suffering from severe pain on his left side. A quick touch and feel inspection told him that he might have some broken ribs. He'd have to get them looked at later. Right now the crew came first.

Just barely managing to pull himself up he noticed how cold and wet

it was. Looking up Claudius saw that there were large gashes missing from the hull letting large amounts of rain into the CIC. The water was ruining any equipment that might still be working. That was the immediate bad news. The good news is that most of the crew lying around the deck were starting to get up after being doused by the falling water.

"All who are not dead sound off." Claudius called out.

A series of moans and groans briefly filled the CIC.

"Alright, can we contact any other part of the ship?"

"No sir, powers off all over the ship, probably the whole fleet.

We might be able to reach them via Omni-tools, but the storm took them out as well. Coordinating with anyone outside this deck is going to be a long difficult process." One of the crewmen said.

Claudius just let out a sigh and buried his head in his hand.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Borealis<strong>

\*\*Aurora \*\*

\*\*UNSC HQ\*\*

There was a tense level of chaos in the building the housed the main base of UNSC operations on Borealis. Everyone was on edge over the possibility of hostile aliens on the colony. Borealis was only lightly defended with not enough soldiers to fight a full scale invasion.

Rear Admiral Yuki Maehara stood calm and proud in the middle of this organized chaos. She was of Japanese descendant and was born on Earth in Tokyo, Japan. Her hair was light blue, almost black, and she had a heart shaped face with purple eyes. One might have called her a real beauty.

Technically she wasn't really in charge of the garrison on Borealis. Rear Admirals usually lead fleets or did desk work. But she was here on an inspection when the storm hit and was now the highest ranking officer. She was currently waiting for Lieutenant-Commander Franklin and his group to return so she could debrief them in person. Although she didn't show it the possibility of an alien invasion scared her. She of course like the rest of the soldiers on Borealis had heard about what had happened at Shanxi and knew that they weren't equipped for a full scale invasion.

Yuki then felt something cold and hard tap her on her shoulder, trying to get her attention. Turning her head she saw that a large android retracting its hand. The android was about 6'2 was made of a shiny silver metal had had glowing golden eyes. She relaxed recognizing the mobile platform for Robert the main A.I in charge of the base. Advancements in A.I technology now allowed A.I to either present themselves in life sized hard light projection or an android body. In appearance, the only way to really tell the difference between an A.I android body and that of a normal human is the glowing

in the eyes. However an android could still look human without a synthetic skin tone, but then anyone would be able to tell it was an android.

"Rear Admiral Maehara, Lieutenant-Commander Franklin's Warthog just returned." Robert spoke in a slightly synthetic voice.

"Send him to the conference room. Have his team on standby. I'll debrief them myself."

Two hours later found Yuki at the communications relay. She had debriefed every member of Lieutenant-Commander Franklin's squad and each of their reports confirmed that an alien fleet had crash landed on the colony, likely with a sizeable force. They needed help. The huge electrical storm in orbit however was going to make that difficult. No ship could safely leave or land on the planet without a disruptor box. Getting a distress signal out would also be difficult. To compensate she had Robert transfer all non-essential power to the relay hub and broadcasted a signal into space hoping someone would hear her call.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Outer Rim Territories<strong>

**\*\*Veragi Sector\*\***

**\*\*Revyia\*\***

Revyia was a rather unmentionable garden world in the Outer Rim Territories. No colonies or establishments of any kind. Currently located in a clearing in the woods on the planet sat three hundred Mandalorians. However they weren't just any Mandalorians, they were one of the most dangerous clans you would ever meet, **\*\*Clan Varde\*\***.

Who are they you ask? Clan Varde are a Clan that has been around since the Mandalorian Wars. They are among the most dangerous of the Clans. What made their Clan name so famous is that their first leader, a particularly nasty Crusader by the name Gorn Varde, was the first Mandalorian ever recorded to kill a Spartan during the Mandalorian War, which naturally earned him a fierce name. Gorn personally bagged the most Spartan kills than any other Mandalorian, totaling at fifteen Spartan-IV kills.

Though they are ruthless for some matters, their honorable, follow a code, and always keep their contract. They began to believe that Mandalore the Ultimate was no longer fighting for their people's best interest, after seeing what happen on Cathar. Gorn's second in command, a Kaleesh named Hudo Varde, convinced many of Clan Varde to support Canderous when he slew Mandalore the Ultimate and pledged their loyalty to him. Hudo also personally killed Cassus Fett himself for his actions in the war, and became Clan Varde's new leader. They have now become an elite commando group for the OSA and sometimes trainers for recruits in the OSA.

The most skilled and veteran members that led the clan numbered at three hundred. They were known as the Legion of 300, the most famous of all of Clan Varde's soldiers. These three hundred were known take on armies thirty times their size (that's 9,000) by themselves with

no fear. Some even said that they were considered second only to Canderous's own private legion, The Metal Fist. It was the Legion of 300 that sat before Hudo Varde now. They were all enjoying some food after their successful mission. They had been sent to demolish a smuggling operation that had been coming from Revvia. Needless to say the mission had been a walk in the park.

Hudo Varde was a Mandalorian Kaleesh warrior of forty three years of age. Normally that would mean his life was a little more than half over since the average Kaleesh lifespan was eighty years. But thanks to modern medical advancements and Forerunner nanites doubling his lifespan that wasn't the case. He was of average height for his species but he didn't wear a bone mask. He wore blue and white armor of a Neo-Crusader. The rest of his men wore yellow and blue with a bit of orange thrown in. The Clan symbol of a snake found on Mandalore was displayed proudly on each of their right arms and on their chests.

Hudo Varde sighed and took a big bite of some beef jerky he was eating. Although he was somewhat happy that there hadn't been any action that had put his fellow brothers and sisters in any real danger lately; he was starting to get bored. He wished something new would happen. As if some deity was listening, his communicator rang at that exact moment. Holding the disc like device in his hand a blue hologram of his comms officer appeared.

\_"Colonel, sir, we're receiving a distress transmission from Real Admiral Yuki Maehara on Borealis. Apparently our UNSC boys are in trouble. There's some kind of invasion going on and their undermanned. She's calling for any and all assistance."\_

That certainly got Hudo's attention. "Patch me through to her."

\_"Yes sir, I must warn you that the message might not get through. Borealis is experiencing a large electrical storm. "\_

Hudo waited for a few moments before a new image appeared. An image of a female human of clear Japanese decent if he remembered correctly.

\_"Colonel Hudo, of Clan Varde. This is\_ \_Rear Admiral Yuki Maehara. The storm above Borealis is getting worse and I'm having trouble maintaining this connection, so I'll get right down to it. Only about two hours ago a fleet of forty alien ships appeared over the colony. Luckily they were caught in the storm and crash landed onto a beach or into the ocean about fifty kilometers from Aurora. That puts them at about half-a-day to a day's march from the capital. \_\_We're estimating their force to be about ten thousand strong. I only have a single \_\_Regiment totaling at 3,200. We need help, can your clan give any Colonel Hudo."\_

Admiral, I pledge to you all the support I can muster. If we leave within the hour we should be able to reach Borealis in two days' time through hyperspace."

"\_We'll do our best to hold them off until then. Godspeed Colonel Hudo."\_

The transmission then cut off, and the comms officer

reappeared.

"Vlad, get the ship ready for immediate departure. I want us to be able to leave within the hour."

"Yes, sir," the comms officer replied, and then cut the transmission.

Hudo turned back to address his men. "Brothers and sisters of Clan Varde. My loyal comrades of the Legion of 300. We have a new job. It appears that some new aliens have landed an army on the UNSC colony of Borealis, and are about to give them some trouble. Their best hope is us. I'm going, no doubt about it. So I ask you now my fellow commandos. Will you fight with me? Will you pick up your swords, shields, and guns and charge once more into the heat of battle with me?!"

All three hundred commandos shouted out "YES, SIR!"

"Then come with me. And we will teach these aliens not only to fear us, but to fear the very battle cry of MANDALORE ITSELF, AS WE SEND THEM RUNNING AND SCREAMING BACK INTO THE WOMBS OF THEIR SORRY MOTHERS!"

\* \* \*

><p><strong>May 31, 26502157\*\*

\*\*Borealis\*\*

\*\*Invasion - Day 1 \*\*

General Claudius was not in a good situation. The storm that his fleet had gotten caught in had completely fried all his ships. By a stroke of luck the whole fleet had landed in the same area, a huge beachhead that stretched for about 2.2 miles. Most of the Cruisers had landed along the edge where the sand met the water, or where half submerged. All of the Frigates had crashed on top of the Cruisers, causing mild levels of damage. As for his Dreadnought, it had crashed into shallow water and continued to skid onto the beach then crashed into the rocky cliff. There wasn't much in the sense of damage, but since Dreadnought's were impossible to operate in atmosphere it wouldn't be able to fly anyway, and half of it was underwater. It would take weeks or even months to get power restored to the remaining Cruisers and Frigates.

To make matters worse was that 5,000 of his 18,000 strong invasion force were dead; having died when their ships crashed, or drowned in the flooded water areas while unconscious. But that was a minor concern. The real concern was that most of his ships were experiencing flooding in their lower areas. Most of the flooding was reported in the storage decks. Crews were able to save as most of the tools, weapons, and armor. But were only able to save half of the food, the rest had been spoiled by sea water. So now they were low on food supplies.

Claudius couldn't retreat or call for help, he was stuck. That meant the mission had to continue as best as possible. As soon as a scout force was assembled they set out. Two hours later the scouts returned after trekking through a forest and up a big hill reporting having



found a small village with what looked like local forces performing evacuations.

Claudius left with a force of twelve thousand within the hour; leaving the other one thousand to guard the ships. They tracked to the village finding it abandoned. As they entered the "ghost town" the Turians soon discovered that they weren't as alone as they thought. From two barns sprang two M808B Main Battle Tanks, more commonly known as the Scorpion, from half of the buildings bopped out Marines barring their rifles ready for a fight.

And a fight is what they got. Both sides exchanged fire while getting to whatever cover they could find. The village was divided in half, the UNSC on one side and the Turians on the other. The Turians rate of fire was greater than their human counterparts, this forced them to stay in cover or get killed when their shields overloaded from ridiculous amount of fire. The Marines did their best to answer back in kind. Cannon blasts from the Scorpions claimed the lives of a dozen or more Turians each; with their machine guns sending rows more to their graves. The Turians attempted to fire missiles at the tanks but the buildings provided excellent cover, that and they got targeted by a Marine Marksman instantly when they poked their heads out to fire. But the Marines were vastly outnumbered. For every Turian they killed, twenty seemed to take its place.

Eventually the Turians started to overwhelm the Marines through sheer numbers and began to push them back. The Marines used the Scorpions as cover and to cover their retreat. The tanks titanium armor combined with its new built in shields made for perfect cover for the Marines. Machine gun and cannon fire from the Scorpions kept the Turians at bay for the most part. Not willing to press the attack on the deadly tanks Claudius let them retreat.

Yells of victory sounded from the Turian soldiers as they saw the last of the Marines disappear over the hill overlooking the village. Claudius gave orders to set up a base of operations but a new sight on the hill stopped him and filled him with a feeling of dread. The two Scorpion tanks had reached the top of hill and were holding their position. What caught Claudius's attention was that they were joined by three more. The now five Scorpions were then joined by two SP42 Main Battle Tanks, or Cobras, and one M12 LRV Warthog on the left and right flanks, accompanied by one M12G1 Gauss Warthog each. They were all lined up and had a perfect line of fire on the village and the Turians clustered inside. "It's a kill zone". Claudius thought to himself.

His insight proved true as each vehicle rained down death upon the Turian forces. 90mm tungsten shells, 25x130mm slugs, 12.7x99mm armor penetrating rounds, and 105mm High Explosive Shells blew Turian soldiers into purple paste by the dozens every 5-15 seconds. Most of the buildings that made up the village were reduced to burning rubble, along with any Turians hiding inside. After about 100-200 of his soldiers were dead and a shot from a Gauss Hog hit near his position, Claudius ordered a full retreat.

As the Turians turned tail and ran the Warthogs gave chase on their flanks. The Turians continued to run as orderly and organized as possible. Even as entire squads and platoons perished and fell under the barrage from the LRV and Gauss Hogs. They continued the pursuit for ten minutes only retreating when the Hogs got swarmed by

missiles.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>June 1, 26502157\*\*

\*\*Borealis\*\*

\*\*Invasion - Day 2\*\*

Once the sun had risen and the troops had eaten Claudius set to work making a new plan. He received a radioed message on his Omni-tool; he was surprised as it wasn't supposed to be working. It was from the technicians back at the ships. Apparently they had managed to get the Omni-tools working again. That meant that communication via Omni-tools had been restored. No such luck getting the ships themselves back online and the electrical storm showed no signs of letting up. In fact, it was stronger than ever.

A lookout came to Claudius telling him that the enemy had been spotted a few miles out. They numbered at about 200-500 men with possible armor and air support. A hundred men were sent to meet them head on while another hundred were sent to flank them. If his soldiers didn't beat the enemy they would at least delay them. The Turian army headed southeast towards the capital along the coastal cliff side. Claudius could hear the sounds of gunfire and explosions even in the distance.

An hour later saw the last of the two hundred Turians fall to his brothers and sister soldiers in death. As the body hit the ground the air was filled with the smell of blood, gunpowder, and death. Despite being outnumbered and facing armor vehicles with no armor or anti-armor support, the Turians had put up a tough fight. The UNSC's armor support came in the form of two Cobras that had managed to drive their way through the narrow paths between the trees of the forest. When they were engaged by the first hundred Turians the Cobra's M66 30mm guns easily tore through the logs and trees they had tried to hide behind, causing them to fall as if they had been cut down by lumbers.

Things were looking good for the humans until the other hundred Turians that had flanked them on their left side and from behind. The surprise of their attack plus the Turians rapid firing weapons ended with about twenty to thirty five marines being cut down, pumped full of bullet holes. There was little to no room for the Cobra's to maneuver, but the weapons platform that made up the vehicles top half rotated ninety degrees and got a clear shot. As the Cobra's powerful cannons once again open fired the Turians fired a volley of missiles, two for each Cobra. One of the Cobra's shields broke from the first missile, its shields having been weakened from the first assault, and was struck by the second. The same Cobra was swiftly struck by two more missiles and went up in flames taking ten marines with it. That was the last same victory for this band of Turians as the marines opened up on them with everything they had, Assault Rifles, Battle Rifles, DMR's, Rocket Launchers, Grenades, and the last Cobra. When the smoke cleared every Turian was dead or dying.

Meanwhile, Claudius and his army of eleven thousand had been marching for the past two hours down the coast, with the cliffs and mountains to their right and a fifty foot or so drop into the ocean on their

left. So far they hadn't met any kind of resistance. So the distraction/delay team must have done its job. Claudius felt a little guilty knowing he had sent those men to basically die to buy the rest of them time. But like any leader he put it out of his mind and focused on the mission.

Except for the sound of the waves crashing against the cliffs everything was silent. Then he could hear this soft whirling sound in the air. The sound got louder and louder until two flying vehicles appeared right above their heads from over the cliff. They looked like some sort of miniature helicopters with turbofan engines mounted on gimbals at the ends. What he was seeing was a UNSC \*\*AV-14 Attack VTOL\*\*, also known as the \*\*Hornet\*\*. Hornets have mostly been replaced in their role as gunships within the UNSC by the \*\*AV-22 Sparrowhawk\*\*. Now they were either used in planetary police forces or military reconnaissance. There were even some civilian models used for private owner ship or luxury tours.

Having spotted the Turian army the Hornets immediately open fired with their twin GUA-23/ Heavy Autocannons. The heavy machine gun rounds absolutely shredded and tore apart any unfortunate Turian in their path. The Hornets attack was answered with missile fire. As the missiles got closer the Hornets swerved and dived out of their path. It turned out that the missiles had a limited seeking function. When they got within a six meters of the Hornets they changed direction to follow the Hornets. The pilots were able to avoid most of the missiles; those they couldn't were destroyed by the choppers anti-missile chaff pods. Then the Hornets fired their own missiles at the helpless Turians. At least they seemed helpless until four glowing blue domes, which looked similar to a UNSC Drop Shield, appeared in the missiles path. The missiles struck the blue domes and did no visible damage; they even withstood fire from the autocannons.

If the Hornet pilots could have seen the Turian biotics holding up the shields they would have seen them sweating and panting from the effort and continued their assault until they broke. But they didn't, and they didn't have the time to continue their assault as they were once again set upon by missiles. The Hornets once again managed to destroy and outmaneuver the missiles and shot at the Turians with their guns. About two dozen Turians total were killed but more of the blue barriers appeared providing protection. Suddenly the pilot of Hornet-1 radioed Hornet-2 and said he had an idea.

What happened was that both hornets fired all their missiles on the cliff above the Turians. The result was absolute massacre and chaos. All along the cliffside rockslides occurred with large amounts of rocks falling down on the Turians. Some were crushed and buried, others were hit and fell off the cliffside into the ocean below and either died from crashing against the rocks or drowned. And some of them were the ones creating the blue shields.

Hornet-1's idea had worked. But there was no time to celebrate or take aim with the autocannons as Hornet-2 was finally hit by a missile that had just been fired. Hornets were only equipped with light armor so Hornet-2 went up in a fireball as the remains of the vehicle fell into the sea. Seeing its partner 'bit the dust' Hornet-1 decided to 'get out of Dodge' and return to base.

Claudius had somehow survived both the initial attack and the

rockslides. He and the survivors spent the rest of the day clearing rocks off the path and searching for survivors.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>June 2, <strong>\*\*2650/2157\*\*

**\*\*Borealis\*\***

**\*\*Invasion - Day 3\*\***

Rear Admiral Yuki Maehara got up from bed two hours before sunrise. She took a shower before getting dressed and going to the mess hall for a quick bite. On her way to the CIC she reviewed the last two days in her head. The marines had managed to hold off and push back the aliens on the first day and had managed to halt their advance on the second. All and all things were going well.

Then her mind turned to darker thoughts. So far this invasion had cost her the lives of three hundred marines, a SP42 Cobra, and an AV-14 Hornet. If she had to guess she would say that the enemy had lost about one to two thousand troops. But the hard truth was that her enemy could afford and sustain losses more than she could. Especially if the numbers she saw through the Hornet's camera were accurate. By now the enemy will have dug their path clear and continue on their way towards the capital. When that happened she was not sure her forces could holdout.

As she entered the CIC one of her lieutenant's came up to her with a report.

"Admiral, we received a weak signal entering the system five minutes ago."

This caused Yuki to look down at the lieutenant's face with a surprised and somewhat hopeful look.

"A ship?" She asked.

"We think so ma'am. Its signature and power readings definitely match those of a ship. We just can't tell which kind due to the storms interference.

"Can we contact them?"

"We could try but our signal might prove to be too weak. If they have a disruptor box they'll be able to pass through the storm and we'll be able to send a clear message once they've cleared the atmosphere."

"Get the projector warmed up and prepare to send a COMM line. If they crash calculate their point of impact and send some birds to search for survivors."

As her orders were carried out Yuki hoped that this ship was here to help them and not the enemy.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Borealis Orbit<strong>

**\*\*Mandalorian Dagger-class Star Destroyer\*\***

**\*\*Bridge\*\***

The **\*\* \_Dagger-class Star Destroyer\_\*\*** is a Mandalorian warship based on the design of the **\_Venator\_-\_class Star Destroyer\_** used by the Twi'leks Navy. For the most part it looked very similarly to the **\_Venator\_** only more dagger like, arguably had more firepower against capital ships, and it had no bridge tower like other star destroyers. The **\_Dagger-class\_** was known for being just as fast if not faster than the **\*\*\_Inexpugnable\_-\_class\_ \_tactical command ship\_\*\***. This particular ship was known as the **\_Commandos Pride\_**. It was the personal flagship of Hudo Varde of Clan Varde.

On the bridge of the star destroyer Hudo sat in his command chair overlooking all his crewmen going about their jobs. They had been traveling through hyperspace with all available speed for the past two days. Now they had finally dropped back into realspace. He just hoped that the UNSC had held out long enough.

"Colonel Hudo, sir, the ship has come out of lightspeed and we are now nearing the Borealis system."

"Have we received any transmissions from the UNSC?" Hudo asked.

"No, sir, but that could be due to the storm. As you can see it's still going strong."

Hudo looked out of the bridge's window and he could clearly see the large electrical storm that seemed to block out the planets sky.

"Is our disruptor box prepared?" Hudo asked.

"Yes, sir."

"Good. Activate the disruptor box lieutenant. Helmsman, increase power output to 110%. And increase our speed by 12%. Let's get inside that planet."

\* \* \*

><p><strong><strong>Borealis<strong>\*\*

**\*\*UNSC HQ\*\***

Admiral Yuki waited and watched. Her eyes never leaving the radar screen board in front of her. The 'ship' they had detected was on the board represented by a blue blip. She watched as it moved closer and closer to the planet until it entered the storm. There were a few brief seconds where she and everyone else held their breath, then breathed out elated when the ship just passed through atmosphere unhindered. She was about to order one of the comm officers to open a channel when they informed her that they were receiving a message from the ship. She stood in front of the holo projector and was happy to see Hudo Varde's image appeared.

\_"Admiral \_\_Maehara, it's good to see your still around. I trust your still in need of our services?"\_

"Colonel Hudo, I can't tell you how glad I am to see you. My marines have managed to stall the enemy, but there are still plenty of them left and their getting pretty close to the capital. Any help you can offer will be much appreciated."

\_"We'll be landing just outside the city. Met us there and we'll discuss how to proceed. Hudo, out."\_

As the line cut out Yuki couldn't help but be filled with new found hope. \_"With the Mandalorians on our side, there's almost no way we can lose this fight now." \_She thought.

She headed out of the CIC calling for someone to get her a Warthog.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Borealis<strong>

\*\*Aurora\*\*

\*\*City Outskirts\*\*

The sun was just beginning to rise as Admiral Yuki drove past one of the makeshift barricades that had been erected around the city. She was in a M12 LRV Warthog with an escort of two M12G1 Gauss Warthog's on each side. She felt that she didn't need the escort of the commander in charge of security was insistent.

There was a low rumble coming from the clouds and Yuki looked up to see a ship she recognized as a \_Dagger-class Star Destroyer\_ descending as if from heaven. It landed not far from her convoy. The ships huge loading ramp lowered and out came three hundred Mandalorian Commandos marching in perfect formation. No matter how many times she may have seen in before, Yuki couldn't help but be awed by the sight of the Mandalorian soldiers. Their armor was made out of a special metal called beskar, a near-indestructible iron ore. This allowed them to take all kinds of punishment that would kill a normal soldier. While it looked heavy beskar was actually relatively light weight.

Most of them wore yellow and blue Neo-Crusader armor, there was a little orange thrown in among some of them. Colonel Hudo was the only one wearing armor that was white and blue so she spotted him instantly. It also helped that he was out in front so he wasn't hard to spot. She got out of her Warthog and walked up to the Colonel followed by three marines. The rest had stayed with the Hog's.

Hugo removed his helmet as they approached so they could talk face to face. She hadn't met many Kaleesh in her time, but she knew Hugo was a Kaleesh. It was only through her military discipline that she didn't scrounge up her face when she saw him unmasked in person. He wasn't exactly pretty to look at by human standards.

"Colonel Hugo, it's a pleasure to meet you in person. Thank you for coming so quickly."

"The pleasure is all mine Admiral Maehara. Now I understand that time is of the essence. What's the situation?"

Yuki reached into a bag she had brought along and took out a camera droid. When the droid activated it projected a topography hologram of the capital city, the Turians current position, and the land around them. A yellow dot represented the capital city and a red dot represented the Turians.

"The enemy is camped out along the coastal path. Another path connects to that one that will take them straight to Aurora. There are two towns along that route as well. We've performed evacuations so they should be empty. We can post men in some of the buildings to set up ambushes. Maybe even try to lure some of them into the buildings to further thin them out. From there we can retreat and employ the same tactic. After that we can pull back and wait for them to arrive at the city. They'll have to cross about a half a miles worth of open field with virtually no cover. That will leave them wide open to machine gun fire and other defenses we can set up. That should cut them down to size. If they try to retreat your soldiers Colonel can surround them and cut them off."

Admiral Yuki's plan was pretty well thought out Hugo had to admit. But it was a plan that relied on no unforeseen problems occurring. If the enemy was allowed to get as far as having the capital city in its sights, that would become unlikely. He decided to make his mind known.

"Admiral, this plan of yours isn't too bad as far as plans go. But I felt that we'd be taking too many chances and put lives at risk needlessly. Besides, I believe I've come up with a better more favorable solution."

He pointed at a section of the map about three miles from the Turians current location. Two mountains pinned very close together lit up red on the map. The mountains were surrounded by woods, cliffs, and other smaller mountains.

"There is a narrow pass between these two mountains here. It's opening is only about a hundred meters wide or less. If I placed the Legion of 300 there and we can engage them in that narrow corridor their numbers will count for not. They'll have no room to maneuver and we can pick them off as we please."

Admiral Yuki did not look as convinced. She had heard the stories of the Legion of 300, but still. "Colonel, are you sure?" She asked.

"My men and I can do this, Admiral. Just as you should never underestimate a Spartan, never underestimate a Mandalorian." Hugo said.

Yuki knew that was true. Actually, it was an established fundamental fact of the Universe.

Very well, Colonel. While you engage the enemy, we'll finish setting up defenses here. I'll have a force of marines sent with you that will be placed under your command. How soon can your men be ready to leave?

Hugo gave a serious smile. "Immediately."

\* \* \*

><p><strong>June 4, 26502157\*\*

\*\*Borealis\*\*

\*\*Mountain Pass "The Gates"\*\*

\*\*Invasion - Day 4\*\*

\*\*Noon\*\*

Clan Varde had spent the whole day traveling to the mountain pass on Borealis known as "The Gates" and building a wall in the middle of the pass. For it was in the middle were they planned to funnel the Turians. Building the wall out of rock and makeshift metal in one day had been possible with the help of the nine hundred marines Admiral Yuki had given him to command. They worked all night and through a rain storm, by noon the next day they were ready for battle.

Hugo and the Legion of 300 were positioned at the mouth of "The Gates". The name was an abbreviation of the famous Greek pass Thermopylae, which means "Hot Gates". This particular pass was named after Thermopylae because it resembled how it looked in 480 B.C., right down to the last detail. Even the defense wall that was now built in the middle of the pass.

Three UNSC marine squads had been placed at the front of the pass. Hugo's reasoning was that if the Turians saw the Mandalorians first they would not recognize them and be hesitant to attack. The plan was that when the Turians showed up the Marines would run back into the pass behind the wall and take up a rear guard with the rest of the marines. Hopefully the Turians would think they were retreating to give warning of their coming. When the Turians gave chase the Mandoes would be waiting to engage them from behind the wall and block their advance.

This would rely on a style Hugo had adapted from the Ancient Greeks of Earth, the \*\*phalanx formation\*\*. This would create an overlapping shield wall that would hold the Turians in their tracks once they slammed against it. The shields would be placed in two rows. With the first row tacking the brunt of the push and the second row provided support by pushing back with the first row. Once the Turian advance was stopped Hugo would give the order to counter attack.

For the past few minutes Hugo could hear the Turians getting closer and closer. For his plan to work it would require careful timing on his part and good acting on the marine's part. He turned to his captain and best friend, a fellow Kaleesh named Avraam.

"Is there any way for them to flank us?"

"None, sir. I've checked and double checked myself. Used every method I know. There are no paths that lead behind us except for the one they travel. If they want to get behind us they'll have to go through us." Avraam said.

Hugo was relieved to hear that. "That's one thing off my mind. I noticed you brought your son. Isn't he a new recruit?"

Avraam smiled in pride thinking of his son, Avraham. "Yes, he is.



Fresh out of the trials. He is a prodigy."

"But he is young. I don't think he's even ever felt a woman's warmth. What if he falls?" Hugo asked in slight concern. Avraham was only eighteen.

"I have many others that can replace him. Avraham is as brave and as ready as any. No younger than we were the first time we stood next to each other, side by side in battle." Avraam replied.

Hugo smiled remembering old days long gone. "You are a good friendâ€¦ but a better captain, there is none."

Turning back to face the path Hugo took out his electrobinoculars. Using the zoom in function he could clearly make out the enemy. The looked bird like similar to the Kig-Yar, but they had much more visible muscle, were taller, and had mandibles that almost reminded him of a Sangheili. From the looks of their armor he was guessing that they had their light infantry in front. A standard military move. Still looking straight ahead he addressed the men, who he knew would be hanging on his every word.

"Get ready men. This is where we hold them. This is where we fight! This is where they die!"

The men gave a cheer. "OOARH! OOARH! OOARH!" In the front with Hugo there were fifty seven other Kaleesh lined in two rows. Each one wielding a \*\*shoni spear \*\*and a shield made of beskar. They also were armed with a Lig sword or a beskad (a Mandalorian shortsword made of beskar).

Avraam yelled out. "Time to earn these shields boys! For Clan Varde! For Mandalore!"

The legion responded with a roar of "For Mandalore!"

Hugo gave one final statement. "Give them nothingâ€¦ but take from them everything!

Just then the marines at the foot of the pass came running. One of them simply said as she passed, "Their here."

Hugo smiled in anticipation. "Mandoes cloak."

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Turian Army<strong>

\*\*"Claudius's POV"\*\*

\*\*\*\*"3 minutes ago"\*\*\*\*

Claudius was miserable and angry. He had been miserable and angry since crash landing on this planet. His efforts to carry out his mission had been increasingly delayed at every possible turn. After the fight with those two miniature helicopters he and his men had spent the rest of the day clearing the path and digging through the piles of rocks looking for survivors. They only found a few. Then during the next day it rained and rained on end making the path unsafe to travel on foot. Not willing to risk staring or falling to

their death in a mudslide the army was forced to stay put.

At least today it was sunny with no signs of rain. So they continued on their march. The morale of his men was starting to get low. It got even worse when Claudius received a report from the engineers back at the ships that they weren't really making any progress. The rainstorm hadn't helped matters and a lot of ships were experiencing increased flooding.

"Spirits, please let this mission be over soon." Claudius prayed silently.

Almost as if the spirits were listening a soldier who Claudius could see was female and held the rank of private ran up to him holding a pair of binoculars. She quickly saluted and then addressed him.

"General, Private Fabia. We've spotted a small enemy force just a hundred and fifty yards ahead."

Claudius grabbed the binoculars and looked in the direction Private Fabia pointed at. He could see about three squads worth of enemy soldiers just ahead. \_"Most likely scouts,"\_ he thought. He then saw that they had finally seen his forces and they turned tailed and ran through what looked like a mountain pass.

"Private, tell the entire forward guard to advance forward and catch those scouts. Tell them to catch them at all costs. We can't let the enemy know our whereabouts and prepare for us."

"Yes, sir." Private Fabi said.

As the order was received the entire forward guard totaling at about three thousand Turians ran into a full sprint after their targets. Fully unaware that they were running straight into a trap.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Battle Start<strong>

\_Play: You're Going Down by Sick Puppies\_

As they heard the Turians get closer and closer Hugo and the rest of his Kaleesh forces jumped over the wall, still cloaked, and got into the phalanx formation. As the Turians ran until the narrow pass the Mandoes held their ground. Once the enemy was almost right on top of them Hugo shouted out, "NOW", all the Mandalorians de-clocked and appeared right in front of the unsuspecting Turians. The first wave smashed against the shields of the phalanx and fell to the ground having not been prepared for the sudden impact. Those that fell were trampled and got tripped over.

The Varde were quick to take advantage of the Turians momentary disorganization and Hugo and his front line thrust their spears into their off-guard foes striking them dead. This was repeated twice more as Clan Varde advanced in the phalanx formation, thrusting their spears into the Turians with strong thrusts striking them dead. Some were even impaled by multiple spears. The Turians tried to gather themselves but had nowhere to turn in the narrow pass.

Taking another strong thrust of his spear and sending yet another life to its end Hugo smiled, overcome with the sound and feeling of battle. Shots bounced off their beskar shields as the Turians started to right themselves slowly. A shotgun Carnage shot was fired at Avraam, but he just blocked it with his shield and then thrust his spear into the Turian ending his life. "Is that the best you can do?" Avraam shouted.

Never before had the soldiers of the Hierarchy faced foes such as these. They just seemed to soak up everything thrown at them. And they had thrown enough to put down a Krogan Battlemaster, maybe even two. The bullets that did get past their seemingly indestructible shields just bounced off their armor.

The shield barring Kaleesh Mandalorians of Clan Varde stood shoulder to shoulder. Taking strength from the man next to them. Letting nothing break their formation. With every thrust of their spears more and more Turians fell. After every thrust the Mandoes retreated behind their shields and continued to step forward. Their feet stepping over the dead Turians and continued pushing against the hoard. Inch by inch the Turians gave up ground until they were being forced out of the pass. The beskar shields continuing to protect their wielders from any gunshots. The front line wasn't even tiring or faulting in the slightest, and those behind the shield line thrust their spears into the bodies of any Turian lying on the ground bleeding, but still breathing. Granting them a merciful death and releasing them from their pain.

Finally the Turians had been pushed back to the mouth of the pass. From here the battle would soon move into the more open coastal ridge path. With another thrust of his spear claiming another life Hugo shouted, "No MERCY! BREAK!" And with that he leapt out of the shield wall and used his shield to bash a couple of Turians out of his way and knocked them to the ground.

The phalanx formation broke and the whole legion ran into the fray with Hugo leading the charge. Hugo bent down low and used his shield in his left hand to knock a Turian over his shoulder, brought it up again to deflect a shot to his side and thrust his shield right through the gut of a Turian in front of him. Pulling his spear out he blocked a downward knife strike with his shield and plunged his spear clean through a Turian's chest armor and out his back. Every Turian that he knocked behind them was killed with a sword or spear strike from one of his men. They all did this, killing one and knocking another down or behind them, knowing and trusting the man or woman behind them to finish the Turian off.

The phalanx formation broke and the whole legion ran into the fray with Hugo leading the charge. Hugo bent down low and used his shield in his left hand to knock a Turian over his shoulder, brought it up again to deflect a shot to his side and thrust his shield right through the gut of a Turian in front of him. Pulling his spear out he blocked a downward knife strike with his shield and plunged his spear clean through a Turian's chest armor and out his back. Every Turian that he knocked behind himself was killed with a sword or spear strike from one of his men. They all did this, killing one and knocking another down or behind them, knowing and trusting the man or woman behind them to finish the Turian off. The Kaleesh weren't the only ones seeing action anymore either, as the Mandoes not flashing spears or wielding swords fired over the heads of their comrades. The

laser bolts from their rifles, pistols, and Light Repeating Blasters totally ignored the Turians Kinetic Barriers and cut down any that got to close to an unsuspecting comrade.

Hugo was unstoppable; the Turians could not seem to harm him. Any that tried died. Once more he used his shield to knock aside opposing soldiers and then thrust his spear into the next Turian in front of him. In a surprise move Hugo changed his grip on his spear, got into a throwing position, and with all the muscle in his arm threw his spear into a Turian ten meters away taking his life. The Turian had been aiming a rocket at him and was just about to fire when she was killed. Her body swerved to her right and in a sudden after death reaction her finger pressed down on the trigger and fired. The missile killed three Turians and injured three others.

Just because he had thrown away his spear didn't mean Hugo was finished or defenseless. He drew his Lig sword and proved to be just as deadly, in not more so. A Turian ran at him trying to blind sight him, but Hugo ducked and lifted the Turian onto his shield and threw him over his back. Not looking back to see his opponent's fate Hugo closed the distance to his next target, whom started to fire on him with a rifle. Blocking the rifle fire with his shield Hugo slashed down upon the Turian's neck without breaking his stride. Then brought the blade around with a backhand slash right across right across the jugular of a Turian on his right.

A Turian attempted to bash Hugo with his shotgun, but Hugo hit the gun with the side of his sword and the Turian went into a sprawling fall behind him. Using the motion of the parry Hugo performed a spin move and bashed a Turian on his left side with the edge of his shield. Following up on his momentum he delivered a backhand swing to a Turian on his right side and sliced right through his neck. Then after staggering another Turian with a punch to his head, Hugo executed a vertical lower uppercut and cut one of its legs off. As the Turian hit the ground Hugo brought his sword down on its neck chopping its head clean off.

Trying to surprise Hugo a Turian tried to jump on him and deliver a knife strike. Hugo saw it coming and blocked it with his shield. The same Turian received a laser bolt to the head for his trouble. Spinning, Hugo cut the neck of another Turian. Getting in his blind sight a Turian ran towards Hugo with a shotgun, his intention was to shot him at close range. Preferably in the head. Hugo reactive at the last second spun 180 degrees and bashed the Turian with his shield sending him backwards into the ground.

The Turian saw its end coming like it was in slow motion. Lying on the ground dazed, all he could do was look up at this T-shape faced demon. He tried valiantly to get up but the demon razed its sword into the air and brought it down right through his heart. His last sight before his world went dark forever was looking right into the face of the demon.

**\*\*Battle End\*\***

\* \* \*

><p><strong><strong>Hugo Varde's "POV"<strong><strong>

Pulling his sword out of the now dead Turian he had just killed Hugo

raised himself up. Although you couldn't see it easily, especially if you hadn't known him for a while, he was panting mildly. Gathering his breath he looked back at his foes.

There were less than two hundred Turians left. None of them were attacking. They were just standing there shaking in obvious fear. In fact, they were shaking so much it looked like they would drop their weapons in they tried to raise them. They had also unknowingly backed themselves up against the edge of the path/cliff.

Avraam came up to Hugo huffing and puffing. But still no less excited about the fight he had just been in. He spoke loud enough so that everyone could hear him and gave his suggestion of what to do with the Turians that were still standing.

"They look thirsty." He said in an almost joking manner.

Hugo smiled, catching on to what Avraam had in mind. "Well, let's give them something to drink. To the cliffs."

All of the Kaleesh got there shields up and back into the phalanx formation. Everyone else got behind them and put their hands on the shoulders of the man in front of them. Then they all marched towards the Turians who had nowhere to go. With the intent of the Mandalorians clear the Turians pushed themselves against the shield formation in a desperate attempt to break through. But the phalanx formation held strong. Slowly but surely Clan Varde pushed and pushed until with one final mighty shove all the Turians were pushed off the cliff into the ocean below. Those that didn't die from crashing against rocks drowned.

Hugo saw that the Turians didn't seem to be able to swim. Needless to say, this amused him greatly. Avraam stood beside Hugo still huffing and buffing.

"Hell of a good start." Avraam said. "For Mandalaore!"

"FOR MANDALORE!" Shouted the whole legion.

Hugo turned to his men. "No Mandalorian dies today."

They then went about the battlefield putting and Turian that was still alive out of its misery.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Claudius's "POV"<strong>

Claudius was dumbfounded. His mind just blank. He'd seen what had just happened through his binoculars. Yet he still couldn't believe or wrap his mind around what he'd just witnessed. Three thousand of the Hierarchy's best soldiers defeated by three hundred. **THEE HUNDRED!** It was inconceivable. The majority of the slaughter, for that's exactly what just happened, was accomplished by soldiers wielding spears and swords and hand held shields.

Claudius couldn't understand. Spears, swords, and hand held shields were beyond antique warfare. Basically Stone Age primitive weapons turned obsolete by modern weapons and technology. The only place those weapons belonged now were as family heirlooms or in museums.

But the enemy had used them and absolutely massacred three thousand of his men.

Looking back through his binoculars he could see that the armored warriors were gathering the bodies of his dead men and seemed to be piling them up. Claudius didn't really know what they were doing. But he sure as hell didn't like it. \_"Have they no sense of honor. No respect for the dead. Savages."\_

It was time to plan.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Hugo Varde's "POV"<strong>

Claudius had been right. Clan Varde was piling up the dead bodies of the Turians. They were building a wall out of them. The UNSC marines were helping. Although they sort of sore and grouchy about not getting to join in the action. It was nearing about an hour to sunset, but thanks to the marines help they were almost done.

"Pile up those bodies high boys. Rest, eat, and get whatever sleep you can. For unless I missed my guess we're in for one wild night."

\* \* \*

><p><strong>June 5, <strong>\*\*2650/2157\*\*

\*\*Borealis\*\*

\*\*Invasion - Day 5\*\*

\*\*Midnight\*\*

Under the cover of darkness seven hundred Turians marched as silently as they could towards the enemy's position to avenge their comrades. These highly skilled Special Ops soldiers were sent on missions that threaten the safety of Palaven itself. Had the highest success rate of any Turian unit in history. The details of their missions are drowning in black ink and red tape. They were the \*\*Turian Blackwatch\*\*.

Claudius had sent them to get the jump on the enemy while they slept and wouldn't see them coming. There would likely be a few guards, but nothing they couldn't handle. Surprise was on their side.

Oh, if only they knew how wrong they were.

The Blackwatch soon arrived at where the enemy had last been spotted. What they saw lit fires in their stomachs and sent waves of anger throughout their bodies. All of the three thousand Turians that had died had been stacked and piled into a makeshift wall made entirely of their bodies. The sight sickened them beyond words. They'd have to move the bodies at the bottom to bring the wall down and then walk over them to reach the enemy. Their anger levels increased and they promised to make this enemy pay with each one of their lives.

Little do they realize they have betrayed themselves and shown a fatal flaw: Hubris. They've shown themselves to be easy to taunt,

easy to trick. Before wounds and weariness can even begin to take their toll. The Turian General sends the best soldiers at his disposal. He's taken the bait.

For just on the other side of the wall of dead bodies lies Hugo and his men waiting for the Turians "surprise attack" to get in perfect position. Hugo's sense of smell can smell a live Turian at the base of the other side of the wall. It's time. "Mandoes, push!" Hugo yells. And they all push the pile over right on top of the unsuspecting Turian Commander. He digs himself out only to be killed by having a spear pierce his heart, compliments of Hugo Varde.

The Mandoes have their spears, swords, shields, and guns ready. They charge into battle bashing Turians aside with their shields and their swords meet flesh while their victims meet deaths embrace. The only problem is that this time everything is disorganized and the fighting is like a free for all. Two Zabrak Mandalorians are tackled to the ground. Another one has an Explosive Omni-Tool shoved in his back, it doesn't pierce his beskar armor but the explosion sends him flying and leaves him bruised. Another is pulled to the ground where he's beaten over and over again. Laser bolts reach their mark. Wounding or killing any Turian they strike, the combatants are so intertwined a clear shot is almost impossible.

Hugo kicks one Turian away then swings his spear like a sword and slashes its pointed tip across the neck of a Turian trying to sneak up on him. Avraam and his son Avraham were fighting back to back. Each was wielding a Lig sword. These Turians were more of a challenge than the ones they faced before. Avraham had just gutted his opponent when he noticed one of the Turians raise his rifle at his father, who did not realize he was in danger. Avraham yelled "Father" and put his shield in front of the burst of mass repelled bullets. He then impaled the Turian on his sword. Avraam looked at his son in silent amazement. Avraham just smiled.

The fighting intensified into the battlefield equivalent of a street brawl. When Hugo noticed that his men were being backed up against the body wall he decided enough was enough. "Marines now!

The marines from the UNSC who had been stuck in the rear guard position all of yesterday emerged came running out from seemingly nowhere. They immediately started firing Assault Rifles, Shotguns, M7 SMG's, M739 Light Machine Guns, Battle Rifles, and DMR's right into the Turians exposed flank. The heavy amounts of fire broke the Turians shields and left dozens dead. Firing back the Turians score their own kills among the marines. As the Turians focus is divided Clan Varde regroups and represses the attack. Blackwatch troops start falling like fly's as spears and swords pierce their armor and flesh.

The two sides regroup, organize, and face each other. Staring each other down. As the Blackwatch begin to charge for another assault the Mandoes revealed their miniature flamethrowers. Some of the Turians were caught by the sudden burst of flames and caught fire. They were put out of their pain with laser bolts to the head. The Mandoes turned off their flamethrowers but kept them pointed at the Turians. Faced with such a weapon in such close quarters with no chance to lengthen the distance the Blackwatch retreated.

Tailing up the dead revealed that about fifty marines have perished.

About one hundred and fifty Turians are dead. Even Clan Varde didn't escape without casualties. Three men were concluded dead and twenty more sporting varying injuries. Their armor having saved them from fatal injury.

After sending the dead back to the city and getting the wounded treated and batched up, everyone had a drink or two to celebrate their victories. Toasts were given , "To the Colonel" and "To our honored dead". Then it was off to sleep.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>June 5, <strong>\*\*2650/2157\*\*

**\*\*Borealis\*\***

**\*\*Invasion - Day 5\*\***

**\*\*Nine hours later\*\***

The next day at dawn the Turians are back. Clan Varde walk out confidently to meet them. This time the Mandalorians are faced with a different challenge, the Turian Cabals.

The first few Cabals attempt to go toe to toe with the Varde. Striking them with the venom-infused blades in their gauntlets trying to pierce the Mandoes thick armor. Their blades bounce off the beskar armor, some even outright shatter. Those first few souls are swiftly put out of their shock and have lives ended via spears through the chest. Warp fields and lift grenades are then launched by the Cabals. The Warp's splash harmlessly against the shields, but the lift grenades send a few flying. Of course they right themselves by activating their jetpacks.

The sight of the flying Mandoes shocks the Turians as jetpacks aren't really used in Council Space. The momentary lag in aggression costs the Turians dearly as the Mandoes unveil another weapon in their arsenal, the wrist rocket launcher. At the same time every blaster rifle and pistol is aimed at the Turian forces. Scores of lasers from the ground and swarms of rockets from the air descended upon the Turians. The Cabals try to defend themselves and their comrades but their biotic barriers are unable to defend against the Mandalorians laser weapons. Hundreds die, either from the lasers or the impact of the missiles.

As the late afternoon dawned the battle still raged on. It seemed the young ones were given the chance to show what they can do. Avraham takes the lead in the battle and kicks a Turian to the ground before pinning him there with his foot. A swift slash from his sword silences the Turian forever. Another Turian runs up to Avraham, his pistol raised to fire, only to receive the same fate.

Avraham slices another Turian down the middle, ducks under and passes the next Turian to plunge his sword into the Turian behind it. A shot bounces off his shield and Avraham answers with a sword slash across the Turians face. His next opponent dies from a vertical slash across the throat. Two Turians attack Avraham together. The strike from the first one is blocked by Avraham's sword and is sent away. Number two's attack is deflected by Avraham's shield before meeting his end via a sword strike to the head.



His next opponent has more skill as he ducks under Avraham's wild swing. Only to get his hand cut off when he tries to punch Avraham. The Turian screams in pain at the loss of its limb before he's finished off with a slash to the face. The next Turian to come running at Avraham dodges the first strike from his sword but leaves his lower guard right open. His leg is cut off from below the knee as a result. A sneak attack goes wrong when another Turian finds himself with a sword in his gullet.

Avraham feels something bump into his back and turns to strike it down. He stops when he recognizes his father.

"You still here?" Avraham says playfully.

"Somebody's got to watch your back." Replies Avraam.

"Not now, I'm a little busy." Avraham remarks as they're once again set upon.

The father and son become a dance of death. Each covering the other's back. If an attack is happening in one of the two's blind spots the other rushes to the rescue. As the Turians attack them are almost instantly struck down. They are a combination of spins and sword swings of death. Avraam even throws his sword into one Turian before using his shield to bash any others any before retrieving it.

Their field is enemy free as they hear Hugo yell to regroup. As the pair return to the fold Avraham doesn't notice a Turian who's not quite dead yet. The Turian struggles to its feet and activates its Omni-tools Omni-blade. As it raises the blade in the air Avraam who's laughing and beaming with pride notices the threat to late. He yells out, "Avraham", but he is too late. The blade pierces Avraham's neck. The boy makes a grunt in shock but can't repeat it. He gurgles on his own blood then falls never to rise again.

Avraam is in shock. He can't believe his eldest son is dead. After watching him fight these last couple of battles he had truly believed his son would make it through. And now he is dead. His heart filled with pain and anger. Avraam notices that the Turian who killed his precious son is dead, having succumb to its wounds. His rage demands to be satisfied and he precedes to cut down any Turian he sees. He becomes like a Sangheili in a Jiralhanae blood rage. Just simply slaughtering everything in his path. When he lost his sword he took off his helmet and beat the Turians heads in with it.

When there were no more Turians to kill Avraam slunk down next to the body of his son. He screams cries of pain and anguish that are more frightening than a rampaging Rancor. It took three men to restrain him and carry him back.

The day belonged to the Mandalorians of Clan Varde. Victory was theirs. But no songs would be sung this night.

\_End: You're Going Down by Sick Puppies\_

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Later that night<strong>

The mood is somber around the camp fires tonight for Clan Varde. Although they are victorious there are no songs being sung or laughter to be heard. The silence is in respect of their comrade Avraam, who is not in the mood to celebrate and be merry.

From a distance Hugo could see Avraam sitting on his own, mourning and cursing the Gods. Hugo walked up and sat down next to his old friend and captain.

"How are you old friend?" Hugo asks.

Avraam sighs. "I've lived my entire life without regret until now. It's not so much that my eldest son died. Not so much that he gave up his life for others. It's just that I never told him that out of all my sons I loved him the most. I never told him how proud I was that he stood and fought by my side with honor. That he was all that was best in me."

Hugo could hear the pain in his friend's voice. As a Mandalorian all shared each other's pain. He got up and knelt in front of Avraam. "My heart is broken for your loss."

"Heart? I have filled my heart with hate." Avraam responded with fire in his eyes.

Hugo looked to his friend with understanding. "Make sure that hate does not consume you. Save it for those who are deserving of it."

Hugo then got everyone's attention. "Mandoes of Clan Varde, listen up. Our enemy has been beaten to a fracture of its former self. They will be licking their wounds right about now. Before turning tail and fleeing like rabbits before wolves. In honor of our fallen, in honor of Captain Avraam's son, I say we don't give them the chance. I say we show them that like the wolf we are hunters. And we shall catch these rabbits in our net. Are you with me?!"

"FOR MANDALORE." FOR MANDALORE." FOR MANDALORE." That was their answer and it was all the answer Hugo needed.

"Then go get the marines. We must hurry."

\* \* \*

><p><strong>Turian Camp<strong>

The mood in the camp was dead. Everyone was gathering up supplies and preparing to move out. No one could believe that they had suffered such a thoroughly humiliating defeat. Nine thousand out of ten thousand Turians absolutely slaughtered by a force of three hundred. None of them would ever live this down.

No one was feeling more dark and dead than Claudius. The General had just suffered the greatest, most humiliating defeat of his career. Most likely the worst in the history of the Hierarchy. Once word of this reached the higher ups he'd be laughed and disgraced out of the military for sure.

Some members of the Blackwatch were on lookout duty in case the enemy decided to launch a sneak attack and finish them off. Many doubted

them would, saying the enemy would most likely be celebrating their victory. Blackwatch argued the fact that that would mean it was the perfect opportunity to attack, but they were shot down. The fact that no one was in the right kind of spirit to try and attack might have had something to do with that decision.

Little did the lookouts know that they were under attack. Under the cover of their tactical cloaks Clan Varde was approaching the Turians camp. With the blackness of night combined with their cloaks they were almost absolutely invisible.

Hugo had spotted the lookouts and raised his hand to stop the silent advance. Like the UNSC, Mandalorians had utilized hand signs early on in their military history. He raised two fingers signifying two hostiles then laid his arm in a 12'o clock position, meaning straight ahead. Two scouts went forward and fired two Kamino Sabredarts from their dart shooters ingrated into their gauntlets. Each hit their respective Turian target right in their throats. The incredibly lethal poisons in the darts killed them in seconds.

With their way clear the Mandoes snuck into the camp, keeping to the outskirts. Once they had encircled the camp Hugo sent a message from his comm link and the marines started to march forward from their hiding position. Starting at a slow walk they sped up into a full blown run once they could see the camp. The Turians didn't see that they were under attack until the marines were half way to being right on top of them. Claudius called out, "To arms! Prepare for battle!"

A voice that sounded as if it were magnified rang out as soon as he said that. "I don't think that's in your best interest." After the voice had gone silent Hugo and his men de-cloaked and rose into the air on their jetpacks, arranging themselves in a dome like circle around and above the Turians. It was then the Turians noticed that they were surrounded on the ground as well. The marines had taken advantage of the Turians momentary inactiveness and surrounded them. As the marines and Mandoes readied their rifles Hugo flew forward into the center of the dome of floating Mandalorians and spoke. He'd managed to translate their language via decrypting some of the dead Turians Omni-tools. As he spoke Claudius realized that Hugo was the voice he'd heard.

"Turians! I am Colonel Hugo Varde, leader of Clan Varde. For the last three days you have thrown yourselves against me and my men. So you know just how outmatched you are. You know just how easily we can end you hear and now. But, I offer you this chance to live. Surrender and lay down your arms and none of you or your comrades will be harmed. You shall be placed in holding and be treated fairly. The alternative is death. To your leader I say this. As a leader it is our duty is to follow orders, give orders, and to carry out our mission in spite of all we may encounter. But we have another duty, a more important duty. A duty to our men. To protect them and deliver them from harm. Think of them; do not throw their lives away."

Claudius had to admit that he was touched by Hugo's words. As a Turian he was trained to always finish his mission. But now that was impossible. He did not have the man power to do that. And this Hugo was right. He did have a duty to his men. So many had been lost due to his orders, he'd be damned if he cost what was left of his men theirs.

Claudius dropped his weapons on the ground and raised his hands in the air. His men hesitated at first, but then they copied his move. As the marines moved in to cuff them, Hugo sent a message to Admiral Yuki to send transports to pick up the prisoners.

This campaign had cost him the lives of a dozen of his men. One of them was the eldest son of his oldest friend. But at last, the battle of Borealis was over.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>OSA Space<strong>

**\*\*Earth\*\***

**\*\*Unknown \*\*Location \*\*\*\***

In a secret location on Earth there was a secret base the UNSC knew nothing about. In this secret base there was a large room that was half a laboratory and half an office. The room consisted of almost two levels. The first level was about the size of a large balcony with a desk, selves, data terminals, computers, and a holo projector. And that was what only could be seen. The second level was a full blown laboratory. Filled with everything you would think to find, as well as some things you wouldn't. The windows in the room showed schools of fish swimming by, this suggested that the base was located underwater. The walls that weren't covered with notes had a picture of a head of a cobra barring its fangs, and it was painted red.

Who did this base belong to? That was a good question. The answer, a secret terrorist organization called **\*\*Cobra\*\***. There wasn't much information available on Cobra as they were very secretive, and very good at it. It was suspected of almost over two hundred counts of terrorism, espionage, and treason. And those were only the ones the OSA knew about. Their operations took place all over OSA space. The ones mainly responsible with combating and stopping Cobra were the G.I. JOES, or Spec-Ops.

Cobra operated in a different number of cells that maintained almost complete isolation from each other. If news and new orders weren't delivered in person it was delivered via Quantum Entanglement Communicators. While small in size Cobra was powerful, mostly thanks to its seemingly endless funding and extensive R&D Department.

Its members and recruits were mostly humans who had become prey to hard times and disillusioned with the UNSC and OSA. Although there were alien members in Cobra they were mostly mercenaries, forces to be used and thrown away if need be.

Currently sitting in the office of Cobra's main base of operations was its leader, an individual known only as **\*\*Cobra Commander\*\***. Like Cobra itself, Cobra Commander was shrouded in secrecy. No one in Cobra knew his real name or his background. Only a few people high up in the OSA Command structure knew who he was, or were able to guess.

Cobra Commander wore a special containment suit and a masked battle helmet with a reflective visor (think of how he looks in G.I. JOE Retaliation). He ruled over his organization with an iron fist and

demanded total loyalty and allegiance. His long term objective is total control of the OSA's people, governments, wealth, and resources, brought about by revolution and chaos. His actions and sinister schemes often drew the attention of and put Cobra in the crosshairs of the G.I. JOES.

Right now he was looking over the reports and videos his agents had sent him over the happenings at Shanxi. Even a copy of the Codex that the aliens that called themselves "Turians" were carrying had been sent to him. He had watched the battles in space and the skirmish on the ground perhaps dozens of times. Yet, he kept watching. Committing every little detail to memory. Tech samples from the Turians ships and weapons had been recovered as well and had been sent to labs for research. He even had a few here in his personal lab. As he finished watching the battle a report came through on his personal comm system.

"Commander sir, our agents on Borealis finally reported in. You're going to want to see their report."

Now that was interesting. Only his top agents or personal ever sent reports directly to him. As far as he knew he had none of those on Borealis. He opened the report and quickly concluded that it was definitely important. The report contained details about everything that had happened at Borealis the past week.

"Things have definitely been intriguing as of late. These Mass Relays definitely lead to new territory that no one from the OSA has ever been to. Lots of territory to explore and hide in according to that Codex. The JOES have been to close in on our operations at a slowly increasing rate. We can set up new shops in any new territory the OSA uncovers. No direct action must be taken just yet. The time is not yet right for the cobra to reveal himself."

\* \* \*

<p><strong>Unknown Space<strong>

**Unknown Location**

Far away in the never ending blackness of space a fleet of fifty ships calmly drifted by. These ships barred some resemblance to the Star Destroyers utilized in the Twi'lek Navy, only these were bigger, had a much more dagger/arrowhead design, and were colored grey. Another thing different about these ships were the crews manning them. The entire crew was made up aliens that looked almost exactly like humans, only these aliens all had blue skin and red eyes. These people were known as the **Chiss**.

Onboard the flagship on the fleet, a ship known as the **\_Chimaera\_**, a person of great importance stood looking out amongst his crew. This person was the captain of the **\_Chimaera\_** and he was waiting for a report. As he was just starting to get impatient, the report finally came.

"Grand Admiral Thrawn, sir. That spy drone we sent out has returned. The techs are going over the data and video recordings now."

"Send the findings to my private terminal in my quarters. I'll be there till further notice. You have the deck, captain."

Thrawn, whose real name in the Chiss language was **\*\*Mitth'raw'nuruodo\*\***, was the head commanding officer of the Chiss military, the **\*\*Chiss Expansionary Defense Force** **\*\*(\*\*CEDF\*\*)**.

Thrawn arrived in his quarters and saw on his terminals screen that the data had already been sent. It contained a detailed account of all the happenings at Borealis for the past week. Including a video of the UNSC and Clan Varde battling the Turians. Thrawn felt a feeler tingling feeling go down his spine. The talents the Humans and Mandalorians possessed for battle had gained Thrawn's respect, but always made him feel slightly afraid as well.

Now, how would Thrawn know who the Mandalorians were and where Borealis was you may ask? Well, here is your answer.

### \_History Lesson Begin\_

The Chiss hail from the planet **\*\*Csilla\*\*** deep in the **\*\*Unknown Regions\*\***. The initial Chiss space-travel era involved their scientists attempting to create hyperfields over vehicles designed to carry passengers. At the same time, automated drones were launched into the Unknown Regions with specialized beacons that led to the creation of a network of navigational anchor-points. As the Chiss began to expand into space, a Syndic by the name of Jer'Jo Cam'Co was responsible for the formation of the Chiss Expansionary Defense Force. He proposed the creation of this group after explorations efforts yielded several resource rich worlds.

Much of the Chiss' expansion was governed by the need to gather resources without upsetting their homeworld's ecosystem. Though their territory later managed to suffice for their growing population, the Chiss continued to expand into space. However, this was not out of exploration of the unknown or out of greed like other species. Being isolated from any other life forms the Chiss wished to completely secure the borders of their territories. The government on Csilla controlled 28 major colony worlds scattered across Chiss space, united in a political federation known as the **\*\*Chiss Ascendancy\*\***. The Ascendancy has since its forming remained completely removed from the various galactic governments of the galaxy. Thus, over the course of thousands of years, the Chiss developed socially and technologically in isolation.

First contact with the outside galaxy did not happen until the year 2579 when a Trade Federation task force of fifteen ships entered the edge of Chiss Space. Thrawn, who was a Commander in the CEDF, was in charge of the fleet that intercepted them. Using superior tactics, the Federation fleet was quickly subdued and all but one ship destroyed. The one surviving ship was captured. Just then a Twi'lek Exploration fleet entered the system, on a mission to look for new planets to colonize. Taking no chances, the Chiss subdued the fleet and took all captured ships back to Csilla.

The Chiss, who were already slightly xenophobic, became more so by leaps and bounds. All surviving life forms aboard the captured ships were detained and studied, the Chiss learning all they could from them. When they gathered as much data as they could the captured people were killed and disposed of. All the technologies the ships possessed was studied and reverse engineered, such as turbolasers and

more powerful accurate hyperdrives. The Chiss didn't just copy the technology; they improved upon it and made it better.

Since then, using the star charts recovered, undercover agents and spy drones had been sent out in mess to parts of the galaxy controlled by the OSA. Agents acquired new technology or plans covertly, and spy drones kept an eye on fleet movements and gathered information on the government factions of the OSA. This was also done by hacking into news feeds.

In response to the growing power of the already powerful UNSC and the other factions of the OSA after the Mandalorian War, the budget of the Chiss Exploration Defense Fleet increased a thousand fold and new fleets began to be built, with no signs of stopping. Among the new ships designs were the \_Imperial I & II-class\_ and \_Victory I & II-class\_ \_Star Destroyers\_. The \_Acclamator-class\_ Star Destroyer \_was also incorporated into the Chiss fleet. These were just a few examples. The bottom line is that the Chiss had been securing their borders and preparing for a fight ever since they discovered they weren't alone in the galaxy.

\_History Lesson End\_

Now hopefully your questions have been answered for the time being.

The existence of a new race as well as another galactic government was big life changing news. Thrawn contacted the Chiss Parliament back of Csilla. The ensuing conversation basically resorted with Thrawn being ordered to keep an extra close eye on the situation.

\* \* \*

><p><strong>AN: \*\*

\*\*I hope you all enjoyed the new chapter. Twenty eight pages, I can't believe it. This makes this chapter the longest yet.\*\*

\*\*I'm sorry if I rambled on about the Chiss, Cobra, or anything else. I just got carried away.\*\*

\*\*The next chapter will be the OSA arriving on the Citadel and meeting the Council. I make no promises on when it will be posted.\*\*

\*\*Please leave a review. Tell next time, by. \*\*

End  
file.